A year's residence in the United States of America / [William Cobbett].

Contributors

Cobbett, William, 1763-1835

Publication/Creation

London: J.M. Cobbett, 1822.

Persistent URL

https://wellcomecollection.org/works/g4rjyhzv

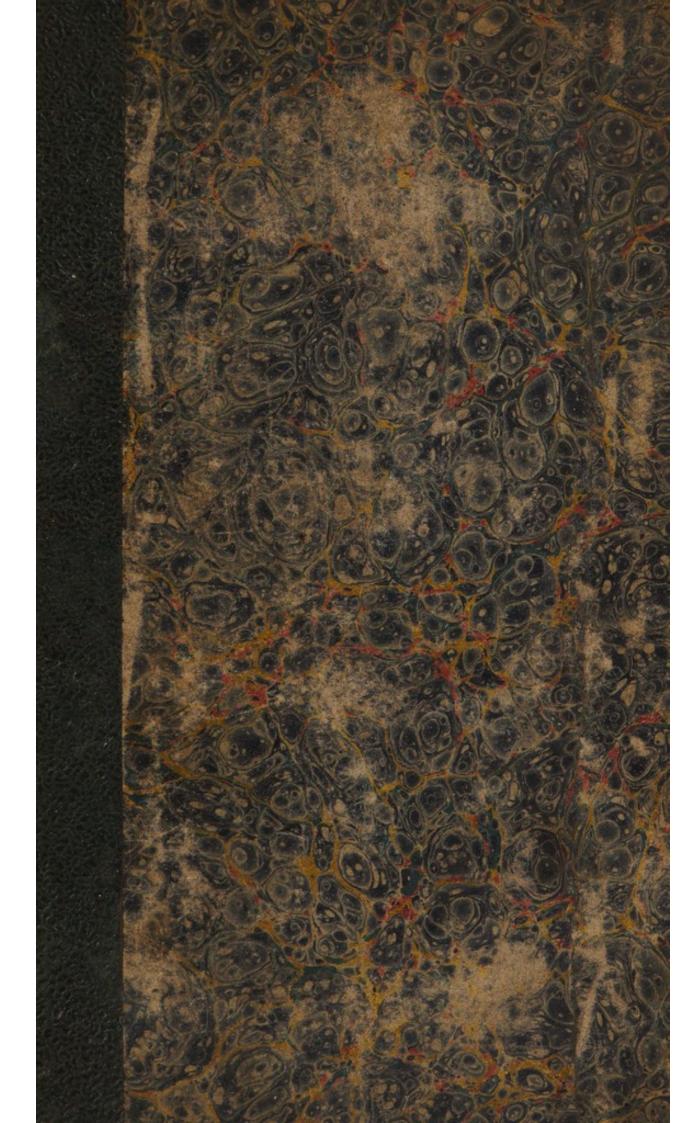
License and attribution

This work has been identified as being free of known restrictions under copyright law, including all related and neighbouring rights and is being made available under the Creative Commons, Public Domain Mark.

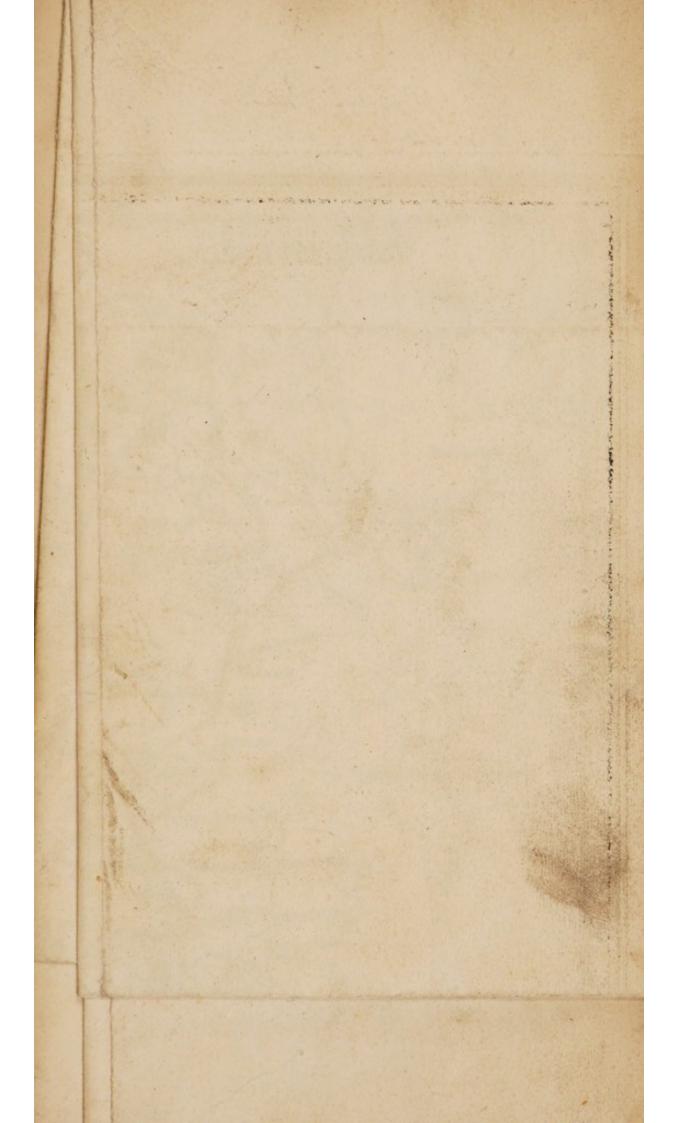
You can copy, modify, distribute and perform the work, even for commercial purposes, without asking permission.



Wellcome Collection 183 Euston Road London NW1 2BE UK T +44 (0)20 7611 8722 E library@wellcomecollection.org https://wellcomecollection.org



1 met 18158 A





A

YEAR'S RESIDENCE,

IN THE

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

ames - Leni

Treating of the Face of the Country, the Climate, the Soil, the Products, the Mode of Cultivating the Land, the Prices of Land, of Labour, of Food, of Raiment; of the Expenses of House-keeping, and of the usual Manner of Living; of the Manners and Customs of the People; and of the Institutions of the Country, Civil, Political, and Religious.

IN THREE PARTS.

BY WILLIAM COBBETT.

THIRD EDITION.

PART I.

Containing,—I. A Description of the Face of the Country, the Climate, the Seasons, and the Soil, the facts being taken from the Author's daily notes during a whole year.—II. An Account of the Author's agricultural experiments in the Cultivation of the Ruta Baga, or Russia, or Swedish Turnip, which afford proof of what the climate and soil are.

LONDON:

Printed for J. M. Cobbett, 183, Fleet Street.

YEAR'S RESIDENCE.

ITED STATES OF AMERICA

of the Face of the County, the Chimete, the

rices of Land, of Labour, of Food, of Raimopir; or Expenses of House brophic, and of the usual

Passion and of the Institutions of the Country,

[ENTERED AT STATIONERS' HALL.]

ROTTIUT GRIHT

per — L. 6. Openingtion of the Face of the County Smale, the squrens, and the field, the facility fake the deploy's dulft notes marry a whole year — if A.

HISTORICAL MEDICAL

BRA

CONTENTS

OF

PART I.

GENERAL PREFACE to the Three Parts .

Page

CHAP. I.

Description of the Situation and Extent of Long Island, and also of the Face of the Country, and an Account of the Climate, Seasons, and Soil . 11

CHAP. II.

Ruta Baga. Culture, Mode of preserving, and Uses of the Ruta Baga, sometimes called the Russia, and sometimes the Swedish, Turnip . . . 46

CONTENTS

PART

day built bearing to the Three Plans

A refusion to the State of

Letterialist of the Edminion and Egreet of Ling word and Interior of the Courtey, and a state of the Courtey, and a state of the Chinate, Seasons, and Sail . II

Cons II

Ross H. o. Culture, Mode of preories, and of the Period the Hole of the Swedings willed the

GENERAL PREFACE

TO THE

THREE PARTS.

- 1. THROUGHOUT the whole of this work it is my intention to number the paragraphs, from one end to the other of each Part. This renders the business of reference more easy than it can be rendered by any mode in my power to find out; and, easy reference saves a great deal of paper and print, and also, which ought to be more valuable, a great deal of time, of which an industrious man has never any to spare. To desire the reader to look at paragraph such a number of such a part, will frequently, as he will find, save him both money and labour; for, without this power of reference, the paragraph, or the substance of it, would demand being repeated in the place where the reference would be pointed out to him.
- 2. Amongst all the publications, which I have yet seen, on the subject of the United States, as a country to live in, and especially to farm in, I have never yet

observed one that conveyed to Englishmen any thing like a correct notion of the matter. Some writers of Travels in these States have jolted along in the stages from place to place, have lounged away their time with the idle part of their own countrymen, and, taking every thing different from what they left at home for the effect of ignorance, and every thing not servile to be the effect of insolence, have described the country as unfit for a civilized being to reside in. Others, coming with a resolution to find every thing better than at home, and weakly deeming themselves pledged to find climate, soil, and all blessed by the effects of freedom, have painted the country as a perfect paradise; they have seen nothing but blooming orchards and smiling faces.

3. The account, which I shall give, shall be that of actual experience. I will say what I know and what I have seen and what I have done. I mean to give an account of a YEAR'S RESIDENCE, ten months in this Island and two months in Pennsylvania, in which I went back to the first ridge of mountains. In the course of the THREE PARTS, of which this work will consist, every thing which appears to me useful to persons intending to come to this country shall be communicated; but, more especially that which may be useful to farmers; because, as to such matters, I have ample experience. Indeed, this is the main thing; for this is really and truly a country of farmers. Here, Governors, Legislators, Presidents, all are farmers. A farmer here is not the poor dependent wretch that a Yeomanry-Cavalry man is, or that a Treason-Jury man is. A farmer here

depends on nobody but himself and on his own proper means; and, if he be not at his ease, and even rich, it must be his own fault.

- 4. To make men clearly see what they may do in any situation of life, one of the best modes, if not the very best, is to give them, in detail, an account of what one has done oneself in that same situation, and how and when and where one has done it. This, as far as relates to farming and house-keeping in the country, is the mode that I shall pursue. I shall give an account of what I have done; and, while this will convince any good farmer, or any man of tolerable means, that he may, if he will, do the same, it will give him an idea of the climate, soil, crops, &c. a thousand times more neat and correct, than could be conveyed to his mind by any general description, unaccompanied with actual experimental accounts.
- 5. As the expressing of this intention may, perhaps, suggest to the reader to ask, how it is that much can be known on the subject of Farming by a man, who, for thirty-six out of fifty-two years of his life has been a Soldier or a Political Writer, and who, of course, has spent so large a part of his time in garrisons and in great cities, I will beg leave to satisfy this natural curiosity beforehand.
- 6. Early habits and affections seldom quit us while we have vigour of mind left. I was brought up under a father, whose talk was chiefly about his garden and his fields, with regard to which he was famed for his skill and his exemplary neatness. From my very infancy, from the age of six years, when I climbed up

the side of a steep sand-rock, and there scooped me out a plot four feet square to make me a garden, and the soil for which I carried up in the bosom of my little blue smock-frock (or hunting-shirt), I have never lost one particle of my passion for these healthy and rational and heart-cheering pursuits, in which every day presents something new, in which the spirits are never suffered to flag, and in which industry, skill, and care are sure to meet with their due reward. I have never, for any eight months together, during my whole life, been without a garden. So sure are we to overcome difficulties where the heart and mind are bent on the thing to be obtained!

- 7. The beautiful plantation of American Trees round my house at Botley, the seeds of which were sent me, at my request, from Pennsylvania, in 1806, and some of which are now nearly forty feet high, all sown and planted by myself, will, I hope, long remain as a specimen of my perseverance in this way. During my whole life I have been a gardener. There is no part of the business, which first or last, I have not performed with my own hands. And, as to it, I owe very little to books, except that of Tull; for I never read a good one in my life, except a French book, called the Manuel du Jardinier.
- 8. As to farming, I was bred at the plough-tail, and in the Hop-Gardens of Farnham in Surrey, my native place, and which spot, as it so happened, is the neatest in England, and, I believe, in the whole world. All there is a garden. The neat culture of the hop extends its influence to the fields round about. Hedges

cut with shears and every other mark of skill and care strike the eye at Farnham, and become fainter and fainter as you go from it in every direction. I have had, besides, great experience in farming for several years of late; for, one man will gain more knowledge in a year than another will in a life. It is the taste for the thing that really gives the knowledge.

9. To this taste, produced in me by a desire to imitate a father whom I ardently loved, and to whose very word I listened with admiration, I owe no small part of my happiness, for a greater proportion of which very few men ever had to be grateful to God. These pursuits, innocent in themselves, instructive in their very nature, and always tending to preserve health, have a constant, a never-failing source, of recreation to me; and, which I count amongst the greatest of their benefits and blessings, they have always, in my house, supplied the place of the card-table, the dicebox, the chess-board and the lounging bottle. Time never hangs on the hands of him, who delights in these pursuits, and who has books on the subject to read. Even when shut up within the walls of a prison, for having complained that Englishmen had been flogged in the heart of England under a guard of German Bayonets and Sabres; even then, I found in these pursuits a source of pleasure inexhaustible. To that of the whole of our English books on these matters, I then added the reading of all the valuable French books; and I then, for the first time, read that Book of all Books on husbandry, the work of JETHRO TULL, to the principles of whom I owe more than to all my other reading and

all my experience, and of which principles I hope to find time to give a sketch, at least, in some future PART of this work.

10. I wish it to be observed, that, in any thing which I may say, during the course of this work, though truth will compel me to state facts, which will, doubtless, tend to induce farmers to leave England for America, I advise no one so to do. I shall set down in writing nothing but what is strictly true. I myself am bound to England for life. My notions of allegiance to country; my great and anxious desire to assist in the restoration of her freedom and happiness; my opinion that I possess, in some small degree, at any rate, the power to render such assistance; and, above all the other considerations, my unchangeable attachment to the people of England, and especially those who have so bravely struggled for our rights: these bind me to England; but, I shall leave others to judge and to act for themselves.

WM. COBBETT.

ned described aday will lin loans

tome made that he all the other

North Hempsted, Long Island, 21st April, 1818.

YEAR'S RESIDENCE,

&c.

CHAP. I.

Description of the Situation and Extent of Long Island, and also of the Face of the Country, and an Account of the Climate, Seasons, and Soil.

11. Long Island is situated in what may be called the middle climate of that part of the United States, which, coastwise, extends from Boston to the Bay of Chesapeake. Farther to the South, the cultivation is chiefly by negroes, and farther to the North than Boston is too cold and arid to be worth much notice, though, doubtless, there are to be found in those parts good spots of land and good farmers. Boston is about 200 miles to the North of me, and the Bay of Chesapeake about the same distance to the South. In speaking of the climate and seasons, therefore, an allowance must be made, of hotter or colder, earlier or later, in a degree proportioned to those distances; because I can speak positively only of the very spot, at which I have resided. But this is a matter of very little consequence; seeing that every part has its seasons first or last. All the difference is, that, in some parts of the immense space of which I have spoken, there is a little more summer than in other parts. The same crops will, I believe, grow in them all.

B

12. The situation of Long Island is this: it is about 130 miles long, and, on an average, about 8 miles broad. It extends in length from the Bay of the City of New York to within a short distance of the State of Rhode Island. One side of it is against the sea, the other side looks across an arm of the sea into a part of the State of New York (to which Long Island belongs) and into a part of the State of Connecticut. At the end nearest the city of New York it is separated from the site of that city, by a channel so narrow as to be crossed by a Steam-Boat in a few minutes; and this boat, with another near it, impelled by a team of horses, which works in the boat, form the mode of conveyance from the Island to the city, for horses, waggons, and every thing else.

13. The Island is divided into three counties; King's county, Queen's county, and the county of Suffolk. King's county takes off the end next New York city, for about 13 miles up the island; Queen's county cuts off another slice about thirty miles further up; and all the rest is the county of Suffolk. These counties are divided into townships. And, the municipal government of Justices of the Peace, Sheriffs, Constables, &c. is in nearly the English way, with such differences as I shall notice

in the SECOND PART of this work.

14. There is a ridge of hills, which runs from one end of the Island to the other. The two sides are flats. or, rather, very easy and imperceptible slopes towards There are no rivers, or rivulets except here and there a little run into a bottom which lets in the seawater for a mile or two as it were to meet the springs. Dryness is, therefore, a great characteristic of this Island. At the place where I live, which is in Queen's county, and very nearly the middle of the Island, crosswise, we have no water, except in a well seventy feet deep, and from the clouds; yet, we never experience a want of water. A large rain-water cistern to take the run from the house, and a duck-pond to take that from the barn, afford an ample supply; and I can truly say, that as to the article of water, I never was situated to please me so well in my life before. The rains come about once in fifteen days; they come in abundance for about twenty-four hours: and then all is fair and all is dry

again immediately: yet here and there, especially on the hills, there are ponds, as they call them here; but in England, they would be called lakes, from their extent as well as from their depth. These, with the various trees which surround them, are very beautiful indeed.

15. The farms are so many plots originally scooped out of woods; though in King's and Queen's counties the land is generally pretty much deprived of the woods, which, as in every other part of America that I have seen, are beautiful beyond all description. The Walnut of two or three sorts, the Plane, the Hickory, Chesnut, Tulip Tree, Cedar, Sassafras, Wild Cherry (sometimes 60 feet high); more than fifty sorts of Oaks; and many other trees, but especially the Flowering Locust, or Acacia, which, in my opinion, surpasses all other trees, and some of which, in this Island, are of a very great height and girt. The Orchards constitute a feature of great beauty. Every farm has its orchard, and, in general, of cherries as well as of apples and pears. Of the cultivation and crops of these, I shall speak in another part of the work.

16. There is one great drawback to all these beauties, namely, the fences; and, indeed, there is another with us South-of-England people; namely, the general (for there are many exceptions) slovenliness about the homesteads, and particularly about the dwellings of labourers. Mr. Birkbeck complains of this; and, indeed, what a contrast with the homesteads and cottages, which he left behind him near that exemplary spot, Guildford in Surrey! Both blots are, however, easily

accounted for.

17. The fences are of post and rail. This arose, in the first place, from the abundance of timber that men knew not how to dispose of. It is now become an affair of great expense in the populous parts of the country; and, that it might, with great advantage and perfect ease, be got rid of, I shall clearly show in another part of my work.

18. The dwellings and gardens, and little out-houses of labourers, which form so striking a feature of beauty in England, and especially in Kent, Sussex, Surrey,

B 2

and Hampshire, and which constitute a sort of fairy-land, when compared with those of the labourers in France, are what I, for my part, most feel the want of seeing upon Long Island. Instead of the neat and warm little cottage, the yard, cow-stable, pig-sty, hen-house, all in miniature, and the garden, nicely laid out and the paths bordered with flowers, while the cottage door is crowned with a garland of roses or honey-suckle; instead of these, we here see the labourer content with a shell of boards, while all around him is as barren as the sea-beach; though the natural earth would send melons, the finest in the world, creeping round his door, and though there is no English shrub, or flower, which will not grow and flourish here. This want of attention in such cases is hereditary from the first settlers. They found land so plenty, that they treated small spots with contempt. Besides, the example of neatness was wanting. There were no gentlemen's gardens, kept as clean as drawingrooms, with grass as even as a carpet. From endeavouring to imitate perfection men arrive at mediocrity; and, those who never have seen, or heard of perfection, in these matters, will naturally be slovens.

19. Yet, notwithstanding these blots, as I deem them, the face of the country, in summer, is very fine. From December to May, there is not a speck of green. No green-grass and turnips, and wheat, and rye, and rape, as in England. The frost comes and sweeps all vegetation and verdant existence from the face of the earth. The wheat and rye live; but, they lose all their verdure. Yet the state of things in June, is, as to crops, and fruits, much about what it is in England; for, when things do begin to grow, they grow indeed; and the general harvest for grain (what we call corn) is a full

month earlier than in the South of England!

20. Having now given a sketch of the face of the country, it only remains for me to speak in this place of the Climate and Seasons, because I shall sufficiently describe the Soil, when I come to treat of my own actual experience of it. I do not like, in these cases, general descriptions. Indeed, they must be very imperfect; and, therefore, I will just give a copy of a

JOURNAL,

kept by myself, from the 5th of May 1817, to the 20th of April, 1818. This, it appears to me, is the best way of proceeding; for, then, there can be no deception; and, therefore, I insert it as follows.

1817. MAY.

5. Landed at New York.

6. Went over to Long Island. Very fine day, warm as May in England. The Peach-trees going out of bloom. Plum-trees in full bloom.

7. Cold, sharp, East wind, just like that which makes

the old debauchees in London shiver and shake.

8. A little frost in the night, and a warm day.

9. Cold in the shade and hot in the sun.

10. The weather has been dry for some time. The grass is only beginning to grow a little.

11. Heavy thunder and rain in the night, and all this

day.

12. Rain till noon. Then warm and beautiful.

13. Warm, fine day. Saw in the garden, lettuces, onions, carrots, and parsnips, just come up out of the ground.

14. Sharp, drying wind. People travel with great coats, to be guarded against the morning and evening

air.

15. Warm and fair. The farmers are beginning to

plant their Indian Corn.

16. Dry wind, warm in the sun. Cherry trees begin to come out in bloom. The Oaks show no green yet. The Sassafras in flower, or, whatever else it is called. It resembles the Elder flower a good deal.

17. Dry wind. Warmer than yesterday. An English April morning, that is to say, a sharp April morning,

and a June day.

18. Warm and fine. Grass pushes on. Saw some

Luserne in a warm spot, 8 inches high.

19. Rain all day. Grass grows apace. People plant potatoes.

20. Fine and warm. A good cow sells, with a calf

by her side, for 45 dollars. A steer, two years old, 20 dollars. A working ox, five years old, 40 dollars.

21. Fine and warm day; but the morning and evening coldish. The cherry-trees in full bloom, and the pear-trees nearly the same. Oats, sown in April, up, and look extremely fine.

22. Fine and warm.—Apple-trees fast coming into

bloom. Oak buds breaking.

23. Fine and warm.—Things grow away. Saw kidney-beans up and looking pretty well. Saw some beets coming up. Not a sprig of parsley to be had for love or money. What improvidence! Saw some cabbage plants up and in the fourth leaf.

24. Rain at night and all day to-day. Apple-trees

in full bloom, and cherry-bloom falling off.

25. Fine and warm.

26. Dry coldish wind, but hot sun. The grass has

pushed on most furiously.

27. Dry wind. Spaded up a corner of ground and sowed (in the natural earth) cucumbers and melons. Just the time, they tell me.

28. Warm and fair.

29. Cold wind; but, the sun warm. No fires in parlours now, except now-and-then in the mornings and

evenings.

- 30. Fine and warm.—Apples have dropped their blossoms. And now the grass, the wheat, the rye, and every thing, which has stood the year, or winter through, appear to have overtaken their like in Old England.
- 31. Coldish morning and evening.

JUNE.

1. Fine warm day; but, saw a man, in the evening, covering something in a garden. It was kidney-beans, and he feared a frost! To be sure, they are very tender things. I have had them nearly killed in England, by June frosts.

2. Rain and warm.—The oaks and all the trees, except the Flowering Locusts, begin to look greenish.

3. Fine and warm.—The Indian Corn is generally come up; but looks yellow in consequence of the cold

nights and little frosts.-N. B. I ought here to describe to my English readers what this same Indian Corn is.—The Americans call it Corn, by way of eminence, and wheat, rye, barley and oats, which we confound under the name of corn, they confound under the name of grain. The Indian Corn in its ripe seed state, consists of an ear, which is in the shape of a spruce-fir apple. The grains, each of which is about the bulk of the largest marrow-fat pea, are placed all round the stalk, which goes up the middle, and this little stalk, to which the seeds adhere, is called the Corn Cob. Some of these ears (of which from 1 to 4 grow upon a plant) are more than a foot long; and I have seen many, each of which weighed more than eighteen ounces, avoirdupois weight. They are long or short, heavy or light, according to the land and the culture. I was at a Tavern, in the village of North Hempstead, last fall (of 1817) when I had just read, in the Courier English newspaper, of a Noble Lord who had been sent on his travels to France at ten years of age, and who, from his high-blooded ignorance of vulgar things, I suppose, had swallowed a whole ear of corn, which, as the newspaper told us, had well-nigh choaked the Noble Lord. The Landlord had just been showing me some of his fine ears of Corn; and I took the paper out of my pocket and read the paragraph: "What!" said he, swal-" low a whole ear of corn at once! No wonder that they "have swallowed up poor Old John Bull's substance." After a hearty laugh, we explained to him, that it must have been wheat or barley. Then he said, and very justly, that the Lord must have been a much greater fool than a hog is.—The plant of the Indian corn grows, upon an average, to about 8 feet high, and sends forth the most beautiful leaves, resembling the broad leaf of the water-flag. It is planted in hills, or rows, so that the plough can go between the standing crop. Its stalks and leaves are the best of fodder, if carefully stacked; and its grain is good for every thing. It is eaten by man and beast in all the various shapes of whole corn, meal, cracked, and every other way that can be imagined. It is tossed down to hogs, sheep, cattle, in the whole ear. The two former thresh for themselves,

and the latter eat cob and all. It is eaten, and is a very delicious thing, in its half-ripe, or milky state; and these were the "ears of corn" which the Pharisees complained of the Disciples for plucking off to eat on the Sabbath Day; for, how were they to eat wheat ears, unless after the manner of the "Noble Lord" above mentioned? Besides, the Indian Corn is a native of The French, who, doubtless, brought it Palestine. originally from the Levant, call it Turkish Corn. The Locusts, that John the Baptist lived on, were not (as I used to wonder at when a boy) the noxious vermin that devoured the land of Egypt; but the bean, which comes in the long pods borne by the three-thorned Locust-tree, and of which I have an abundance here. The wild honey was the honey of wild bees; and the hollow trees here contain swarms of them. The trees are cut, sometimes, in winter, and the part containing the swarm, brought and placed near the house. I saw this lately in Pennsylvania.

4. Fine rain. Began about ten o'clock.

5. Rain nearly all day.

6. Fine and warm. Things grow surprisingly.

7. Fine and warm. Rather cold at night.

8. Hot.

9. Rain all day. The wood green, and so beautiful! The leaves look so fresh and delicate! But, the Flowering Locust only begins to show leaf. It will, by and by, make up, by its beauty, for its shyness at present.

10. Fine warm day. The cattle are up to their eyes

in grass.

II. Fine warm day. Like the very, very finest in England in June.

12. Fine day. And, when I say fine, I mean really

fine. Not a cloud in the sky.

13. Fine and hot. About as hot as the hottest of our English July weather in common years. Lucerne, $2\frac{1}{2}$ feet high.

14. Fine and hot; but, we have always a breeze when it is hot, which I did not formerly find in Pennsylvania. This arises, I suppose, from our nearness to the sea.

15. Rain all day.

16. Fine, beautiful day. Never saw such fine weather.

Not a morsel of dirt. The ground sucks up all. I walk about and work in the land in shoes made of deerskin. They are dressed white, like breeches-leather. I began to leave off my coat to day, and do not expect to put it on again till October. My hat is a white chip, with broad brims. Never better health.

17. Fine day. The partridges (miscalled quails) begin to sit. The orchard full of birds' nests; and, amongst others, a dove is sitting on her eggs in an

apple tree.

18. Fine day. Green peas fit to gather in pretty early gardens, though only of the common hotspur

sort. May-duke cherries begin to be ripe.

- 19. Fine day. But, now comes my alarm! The musquitoes, and, still worse, the common house-fly, which used to plague us so in Pennsylvania, and which were the only things I ever disliked belonging to the climate of America. Musquitoes are bred in stagnant water, of which here is none. Flies are bred in filth, of which none shall be near me as long as I can use a shovel and a broom. They will follow fresh meat and fish. Have neither, or be very careful. I have this day put all these precautions in practice; and, now let us see the result.
- 20. Fine day. Carrots and parsnips, sown on the 3d and 4th instant, all up, and in rough leaf! Onions up. The whole garden green in 18 days from the sowing.

21. Very hot. Thunder and heavy rain at night.

22. Fine day. May-duke cherries ripe.23. Hot and close. Distant thunder.

24. Fine day.

25. Fine day. White-heart and black-heart cherries getting ripe.

26. Rain. Planted out cucumbers and melons, I

find I am rather late.

27. Fine day.

28. Fine day. Gathered cherries for drying for winter use.

29. Fine day.

30. Rain all night. People are planting out their cabbages for the winter crop.

JULY.

1. Fine day. Bought 20 bushels of English salt for half a dollar a bushel.

2 & 3. Fine days.

4. Fine day. Carrots, sown 3d June, 3 inches high.

5. Very hot day. No flies yet.

6. Fine hot day. Currants ripe. Oats in haw. Rye nearly ripe. Indian corn two feet high. Hay-making nearly done.

7. Rain and thunder early in the morning.

8. Fine hot day. Wear no waistcoat now, except in

the morning and evening.

9. Fine hot day. Apples to make puddings and pies; but our housekeeper does not know how to make an apple-pudding. She puts the pieces of apple amongst the batter! She has not read Peter Pindar.

10. Fine hot day. I work in the land morning and evening, and write in the day in a north room. The dress is now become a very convenient, or, rather, a very little inconvenient affair. Shoes, trowsers, shirt and hat. No plague of dressing and undressing!

11. Fine hot day in the morning, but began to grow

dark in the afternoon. A sort of haze came over.

12. Very hot day. The common black cherries, the little red honey cherries, all ripe now, and falling and rotting by the thousands of pounds weight. But, this place which I rent is remarkable for abundance of cherries. Some early peas, sown in the second week in June, fit for the table. This is thirty days from the time of sowing. No flies yet! No musquitoes!

13. Hot and heavy, like the pleading of a quartersessions lawyer. No breeze to-day, which is rarely

the case.

14. Fine day. The Indian corn four feet high.

15. Fine day. We eat turnips sown on the second of June. Early cabbages (a gift) sown in May.

16. Fine hot day. Fine young onions, sown on the

8th of June.

17. Fine hot day. Harvest of wheat, rye, oats and barley, half done. But, indeed, what is it to do when the weather does so much!

18. Fine hot day.
19. Rain all day.

20. Fine hot day, and some wind. All dry again as

completely as if it had not rained for a year.

21. Fine hot day; but heavy rain at night. Flies, a few. Not more than in England. My son John, who has just returned from Pennsylvania, says they are as great torments there as ever. At a friend's house (a farm house) there, two quarts of flies were caught in one window in one day! I do not believe that there are two quarts in all my premises. But, then, I cause all wash and slops to be carried forty yards from the house. I suffer no peelings or greens, or any rubbish, to lie near the house. I suffer no fresh meat to remain more than one day fresh in the house. I proscribe all fish. Do not suffer a dog to enter the house. Keep all pigs at a distance of sixty yards. And sweep all round about once every week at least.

22. Fine hot day.

23. Fine hot day. Sowed Buck-wheat in a piece of

very poor ground.

24. Fine hot day. Harvest (for grain) nearly over. The main part of the wheat, &c. is put into Barns, which are very large and commodious. Some they put into small ricks, or stacks, out in the fields, and there they stand, without any thatching, till they are wanted to be taken in during the winter, and, sometimes they remain out for a whole year. Nothing can prove more clearly than this fact, the great difference between this climate and that of England, where, as every body knows, such stacks would be mere heaps of muck by January, if they were not, long and long before that time, carried clean off the farm by the wind. The crop is sometimes threshed out in the field by the feet of horses, as in the South of France. It is sometimes carried into the barn's floor, where three or four horses, or oxen, going abreast, trample out the grain as the sheaves, or swarths, are brought in. And this explains to us the humane precept of Moses, " not to muzzle the " ox as he treadeth out the grain," which we country people in England cannot make out. I used to be puzzled too, in the story of RUTH, to imagine how BOAZ

could be busy amongst his threshers in the height of harvest.—The weather is so fine, and the grain so dry, that, when the wheat and rye are threshed by the flail, the sheaves are barely untied, laid upon the floor, receive a few raps, and are then tied up, clean threshed for straw, without the order of the straws being in the least changed! The ears and butts retain their places in the sheaf, and the band that tied the sheaf before ties it again. The straw is as bright as burnished gold. Not a speck in it. These facts will speak volumes to an English farmer, who will see with what ease work must be done in such a country.

25. Fine hot day. Early pea, mentioned before, harvested, in forty days from the sowing. Not more

flies than in England.

26. Fine broiling day. The Indian Corn grows away now, and has, each plant, at least, a tumbler full of water standing in the sockets of its leaves, while the sun seems as if it would actually burn one. Yet we have a breeze; and, under these fine shady Walnuts and Locusts and Oaks, and on the fine grass beneath, it is very pleasant. Woodcocks begin to come very thick about.

27. Fine broiler again. Some friends from England here to-day. We spent a pleasant day; drank success to the Debt, and destruction to the Boroughmongers, in gallons of milk and water.—Not more flies than in

England.

28. Very, very hot. The Thermometer 85 degrees in the shade; but a breeze. Never slept better in all my life. No covering. A sheet under me, and a straw bed. And then, so happy to have no clothes to put on but shoes and trowsers! My window looks to the East. The moment the Aurora appears, I am in the Orchard. It is impossible for any human being to lead a pleasanter life than this. How I pity those, who are compelled to endure the stench of cities; but, for those who remain there without being compelled, I have no pity.

29. Still the same degree of heat. I measured a water-melon runner, which grew eighteen inches in the last 48 hours. The dews now are equal to showers; I frequently, in the morning, wash hands and face, feet

and legs, in the dew on the high grass. The Indian Corn shoots up now so beautifully!

30. Still melting hot.
31. Same weather.

AUGUST.

1. Same weather. I take off two shirts a day wringing wet, I have a clothes-horse to hang them on to dry. Drink about 20 good tumblers of milk and water every day. No ailments. Head always clear. Go to bed by day-light very often. Just after the hens go to roost, and rise again with them.

2. Hotter and hotter, I think; but, in this weather we always have our friendly breeze.—Not a single mus-

quito yet.

3. Cloudy and a little shattering of rain; but not enough to lay the dust.

4. Fine hot day.

5. A very little rain. Dried up in a minute. Planted cabbages with dust running into the holes.

6. Fine hot day.

7. Appearances forebode rain.—I have observed that, when rain is approaching, the stones (which are the rock stone of the country), with which a piazza adjoining the house is paved, get wet. This wet appears, at first, at the top of each round stone, and, then, by degrees, goes all over it. Rain is sure to follow. It has never missed; and, which is very curious, the rain lasts exactly as long as the stones take to get all over wet before it comes! The stones dry again before the rain ceases. However, this foreknowledge of rain is of little use here; for, when it comes, it is sure to be soon gone; and to be succeeded by a sun, which restores all to rights.

7. I wondered, at first, why I never saw any barometers in people's houses, as almost every farmer has them in England. But, I soon found, that they would be, if perfectly true, of no use. Early pears ripe.

8. Fine rain. It comes pouring down.

9. Rain still, which has now lasted 60 hours.—Killed a lamb, and, in order to keep it fresh, sunk it down into the well.—The wind makes the Indian corn bend.

- 10. Fine clear hot day. The grass, which was brown the day before yesterday, is already beautifully green. In one place, where there appeared no signs of vegetation, the grass is two inches high.
 - 11. Heavy rains at night.12 & 13. Hot and close.

14. Hot and close. No breezes these three days.

15. Very hot indeed. 80 degrees in a North aspect at 9 in the evening. Three wet shirts to-day. Obliged to put on a dry shirt to go to bed in.

16. Very hot indeed. 85 degrees; the thermometer hanging under the Locust-trees and swinging about with the breeze. The dews are now like heavy showers.

17. Fine hot day. Very hot. I fight the Borough-villains, stripped to my shirt, and with nothing on besides, but shoes and trowsers. Never ill; no head-aches; no muddled brains. The milk and water is a great cause of this. I live on salads, other garden vegetables, apple-puddings and pies, butter, cheese, (very good from Rhode Island) eggs, and bacon. Resolved to have no more fresh meat, 'till cooler weather comes. Those who have a mind to swallow, or be swallowed by, flies, may eat fresh meat for me.

18. Fine and hot.

19. Very hot.
20. Very hot; but a breeze every day and night.
Buckwheat, sown 23rd July, 9 inches high, and, poor
as the ground was, looks very well.

21 & 22. Fine hot days.

23. Fine hot day. I have now got an English woman-servant, and she makes us famous apple-puddings. She says she has never read Peter Pindar's account of the dialogue between the King and the Cottage-woman; and yet she knows very well how to get the apples within side of the paste. N.B. No man ought to come here, whose wife and daughters cannot make puddings and pies.

24, 25, & 26. Fine hot days.

27. Fine hot day. Have not seen a cloud for many days.
28. Windy and rather coldish. Put on cotton stockings and a waistcoat with sleeves. Do not like this weather.

29. Same weather. Do not like it.

30. Fine and hot again. Give a great many apples to hogs. Got some hazle-nuts in the wild grounds. Larger than the English: and much about the same taste.

31. Fine hot day. Prodigious dews.

SEPTEMBER.

1 & 2. Fine and hot.

- 3. Famously hot. Fine breezes. Began imitating the Disciples, at least in their diet; for, to-day, we began "plucking the ears of corn" in a patch planted in the garden on the second of June. But, we, in imitation of Pindar's pilgrim, take the liberty to boil our Corn. We shall not starve now.
 - 4. Fine and hot. 83 degrees under the Locust-trees.

5. Very hot indeed, but fair, with our old breeze.

6, 7, & 8. Same weather.

9. Rather hotter. We, amongst seven of us, eat about 25 ears of Corn a-day. With me it wholly supplies the place of bread. It is the choicest gift of God to man, in the way of food. I remember, that Arthur Young observes, that the proof of a good climate is, that Indian Corn comes to perfection in it. Our Corn is very fine. I believe, that a wine-glass full of milk might be squeezed out of one ear. No wonder the Disciples were tempted to pluck it when they were hungry, though it was on the Sabbath day!

10. Appearances for rain; and, it is time; for my neighbours begin to cry out, and our rain-water cistern begins to shrink. The well is there, to be sure; but, to pull up water from 70 feet is no joke, while it requires nearly as much sweat to get it up, as we get water.

11. No rain; but cloudy. 83 degrees in the shade.
12. Rain and very hot in the morning. Thunder and heavy rain at night.

13. Cloudy and cool. Only 55 degrees in shade.

14. Cloudy and cool.

15. Fair and cool. Made a fire to write by. Don't like this weather.

16. Rain, warm.

17. Beautiful day. Not very hot. Just like a fine day in July in England after a rain.

18. Same weather. Wear stockings now and a

waistcoat and neck-handkerchief.

19. Same weather. Finished our Indian Corn, which, on less than 4 rods, or perches, of ground, produced 447 ears. It was singularly well cultivated. It was the long yellow Corn. Seed given me by my excellent neighbour, Mr. John Tredwell.

20, 21, & 22. Same weather.

23. Cloudy and hotter.

24. Fine rain all last night and until ten o'clock to-day.

25. Beautiful day.

26. Same weather. 70 degrees in shade. Hot as the hot days in August in England.

27. Rain all last night.

28. Very fine and warm. Left off the stockings again.

29. Very fine, 70 degrees in shade.

30. Same weather.

OCTOBER.

1. Same weather. Fresh meat keeps pretty well now.

2. Very fine; but, there was a little frost this morning, which did not, however, affect the late-sown Kidney Beans, which are as tender as the cucumber plant.

3. Cloudy and warm.

4. Very fine and warm, 70 degrees in shade. The apples are very fine. We are now cutting them and quinces, to dry for winter use. My neighbours give me quinces. We are also cutting up and drying peeches.

5. Very fine and warm. Dwarf Kidney beans very

fine.

6. Very fine and warm. Cutting Buckwheat.

7. Very fine and warm. 65 degrees in shade at 7 o'clock this morning. Windy in the afternoon. The wind is knocking down the fall-pipins for us. One picked up to-day weighed 12½ ounces avoirdupois weight. The average weight is about 9 ounces, or, perhaps, 10 ounces. This is the finest of all apples. Hardly any core. Some none at all. The richness of the pine-apple without the roughness. If the King

could have seen one of these in a dumpling! This is not the Newtown Pippin, which is sent to England in such quantities. That is a winter apple. Very fine at Christmas; but far inferior to this fall-pippin, taking them both in their state of perfection. It is useless to send the trees to England, unless the heat of the sun and the rains and the dews could be sent along with the trees.

8. Very fine, 68 in shade.

9. Same weather.

10. Same weather, 59 degrees in shade. A little white frost this morning. It just touched the tips of the kidney bean leaves; but, not those of the cucumbers or melons, which are near fences.

11. Beautiful day. 61 degrees in shade. Have not put on a coat yet. Wear thin stockings, or socks, waistcoat with sleeves, and neckcloth. In New York market, Kidney Beans and Green peas.

12. Beautiful day. 70 degrees in shade.

13. Same weather.

14. Rain. 50 degrees in shade. Like a fine, warm, June rain in England.

15. Beautiful day. 56 degrees in shade. Here is a

month of October!

16. Same weather. 51 degrees in shade.

17. Same weather, but a little warmer in the day. A smart frost this morning. The kidney beans, cucumber and melon-plants, pretty much cut by it.

18. A little rain in the night. A most beautiful day.

54 degrees in shade. A June day for England.

19. A very white frost this morning. Kidney beans, cucumbers, melons, all demolished; but a beautiful day. 56 degrees in shade.

20. Another frost, and just such another day. Thresh-

ing Buckwheat in field.

21. No frost. 58 degrees in shade.

22. Finest of English June days. 67 degrees in shade.

23. Beautiful day. 70 degrees in shade. Very few summers in England that have a day hotter than this. It is this fine sun that makes the fine apples.

24. Same weather precisely. Finished Buckwheat threshing and winnowing. The men have been away at a horse-race; so that it has laid out in the field, partly threshed and partly not, for five days. If rain had come, it would have been of no consequence. All would have been dry again directly afterwards. What a stew a man would be in, in England, if he had his grain lying about out of doors in this way! The cost of threshing and winnowing 60 bushels was 7 dollars, 1l. 11s. 6d. English money, that is to say, 4s. a quarter, or eight Winchester bushels. But, then, the carting was next to nothing. Therefore, though the labourers had a dollar a-day each, the expense upon the whole, was not so great as it would have been in England. So much does the climate do!

25. Rain. A warm rain, like a fine June rain in England. 57 degrees in shade. The late frosts have killed, or, at least, pinched the leaves of the trees; and they are now red, yellow, russet, brown, or of a dying green. Never was any thing so beautiful as the bright sun, shining through these fine lofty trees upon the gay

verdure beneath.

26. Rain. Warm. 58 degrees in shade. This is the general Indian Corn harvest.

27. Rain. Warm. 58 degrees in shade. Put on

coat, black hat and black shoes.

- 28. Fine day. 56 degrees in shade. Pulled up a Radish that weighed 12 pounds! I say twelve, and measured 2 feet 5 inches round. From common English seed.
 - 29. Very fine indeed. 30. Very fine and warm.
- 31. Very fine. 54 degrees in shade. Gathered our last lot of winter apples.

NOVEMBER.

1. Rain all the last night and all this day.

2. Rain still. 54 degrees in shade. Warm. Things

grow well. The grass very fine and luxuriant.

3. Very fine indeed. 56 in shade. Were it not for the colour of the leaves of the trees, all would look like June in England.

4. Very, very fine. Never saw such pleasant wea-

ther. Digging potatoes.

5. Same weather precisely.6. A little cloudy, but warm.

7. Most beautiful weather! 63 degrees in shade.

N.B. This is November.

8. A little cloudy at night fall. 68 degrees in shade; that is to say, English Summer heat all but 7 degrees.

9 & 10. Very fine.

11. Very fine. When I got up this morning, I found the thermometer hanging on the Locust-trees, dripping with dew, at 62 degrees. Left off my coat again.

12. Same weather. 69 degrees in shade.

13. Beautiful day, but cooler.

14. Same weather. 50 degrees in shade. The high-ways and paths as clean as a boarded floor; that is to say, from dirt or mud.

15. Gentle rain. 53 in shade. Like a gentle rain in

May in England.

November for an Englishman to see! My white turnips have grown almost the whole of their growth in this month. The Swedish, planted late, grow surprisingly now, and have a luxuriancy of appearance exceeding any thing of the kind I ever saw. We have fine loaved lettuces; endive, young onions, young radishes, cauliflowers, with heads five inches over. The rye-fields grow beautifully. They have been food for cattle for a month, or six weeks, past.

17. Cloudy. Warm.

18. Same weather. 55 degrees in shade.

19. Frost, and the ground pretty hard.

20. Very fine indeed. Warm. 55 degrees in shade.

21. Same weather.

22. Cold, damp air, and cloudy.

23. Smart frost at night.

24, 25, 26, & 27. Same. Warm in the daytime.

28 & 29. Same; but more warm in the day.

30. Fine warm and beautiful day; no frost at night. 57 degrees in shade.

DECEMBER.

1. Same weather precisely; but, we begin to fear the setting-in of winter, and I am very busy in covering up cabbages, mangel wurzel, turnips, beets, carrots, parsnips, parsley, &c. the mode of doing which (not less useful in England than here, though not so indispensably necessary) shall be described when I come to speak of the management of these several plants.

2. Fine warm rain. 56 in shade.

3, 4, 5, 6, 7, & 8. Very fair and pleasant, but frost sufficiently hard to put a stop to our getting up and stacking turnips. Still, however, the cattle and sheep do pretty well upon the grass which is long and dead. Fatting oxen we feed with the greens of Ruta Baga, with some corn (Indian, mind) tossed down to them in the ear. Sheep (ewes that had lambs in spring) we kill very fat from the grass. No dirt. What a clean and convenient soil!

9. Thaw. No rain. We get on with our work again.

10. Open mild weather.

11. Same weather. Very pleasant.

12. Rain began last night.

13. Rain all day.

14. Rain all day. The old Indian remark is, that the winter does not set in till the ponds be full. It is

coming, then.

15. Rain till 2 o'clock. We kill mutton now. Ewes brought from Connecticut, and sold to me here at 2 dollars each in July, just after shearing. I sell them now alive at 3 dollars each from the grass. Killed and sent to market; they leave me the loose fat for candles, and fetch about 3 dollars and a quarter besides.

16. Sharp North West wind. This is the cold American Wind. "A North Wester" means all that can be imagined of clear in summer and cold in winter. I remember hearing from that venerable and excellent man, Mr. Baron Maseres, a very elegant eulogium on the Summer North Wester, in England. This is the only public servant that I ever heard of, who refused a proffered augmentation of salary!

17. A hardish frost.

18. Open weather again.

- 19. Fine mild day; but began freezing at night-fall.
 - 20. Hard frost.

21. Very sharp indeed. Thermometer down to 10 degrees; that is to say, 22 degrees colder than barely

freezing.

22. Same weather. Makes us run, where we used to walk in the fall, and to saunter in the summer. It is no new thing to me; but it makes our other English people shrug up their shoulders.

23. Frost greatly abated. Stones show for wet. It will come, in spite of all the fine serene sky, which

we now see.

24. A thaw. Servants made a lot of candles from mutton and beef fat, reserving the coarser parts to make

soap.

25. Rain. Had some English friends. Sirloin of own beef. Spent the evening in light of own candles, as handsome as I ever saw, and, I think, the very best I ever saw. The reason is, that the tallow is fresh, and that it is unmixed with grease, which, and staleness, is the cause, I believe, of candles running, and plaguing us while we are using them. What an injury is it to the farmers in England, that they dare not, in this way, use their own produce: Is it not a mockery to call a man free, who no more dares turn out his tallow into candles for his own use, than he dares rob upon the highway? Yet, it is only by means of tyranny and extortion like this, that the hellish system of Funding and of Seat-selling can be upheld.

26. Fine warm day. 52 degrees in shade.

27. Cold, but little frost.

28. Same weather. Fair and pleasant. The late sharp frost has changed to a complete yellow every leaf of some Swedish Turnips (Ruta Baga), left to take their chance. It is a poor chance, I believe!

as open tor ment

29. Same weather. 30. Rain all day.

31. Mild and clear. No frost.

1818. JANUARY.

1 & 2. Same weather.

3. Heavy rain.

- 4. A frost that makes us jump and skip about like larks. Very seasonable for a sluggish fellow. Prepared for winter. Patched up a boarded building, which was formerly a coach-house; but, which is not so necessary to me, in that capacity, as in that of a fowlhouse. The neighbours tell me, that the poultry will roost out on the trees all the winter, which, the weather being so dry in winter, is very likely; and, indeed, they must, if they have no house, which is almost universally the case. However, I mean to give the poor things a choice. I have lined the said coach-house with cornstalks and leaves of trees, and have tacked up cedarboughs to hold the lining to the boards, and have laid a bed of leaves a foot thick all over the floor. I have secured all against dogs, and have made ladders for the fowls to go in at holes six feet from the ground. I have made pig-styes, lined round with cedar-boughs and well covered. A sheep-yard, for a score of ewes to have lambs in spring, surrounded with a hedge of cedarboughs, and with a shed for the ewes to lie under, if they like. The oxen and cows are tied up in a stall. The dogs have a place, well covered, and lined with cornstalks and leaves. And now, I can, without anxiety, sit by the fire, or lie in bed, and hear the North-Wester whistle.
- 5. Frost. Like what we call "a hard frost" in England.

6. Such another frost at night, but a thaw in the

middle of the day.

7. Little frost. Fine warm day. The sun seems loth to quit us.

8. Same weather.

9. A harder frost, and snow at night. The fowls, which have been peeping at my ladders for two or three evenings, and partially roosting in their house, made their general entry this evening! They are the best judges of what is best for them. The turkeys boldly set the

weather at defiance, and still roost on the top, the ridge, of the roof, of the house. Their feathers prevent their legs from being frozen, and so it is with all poultry; but, still, a house must, one would think, be better than

the open air at this season.

- 10. Snow, but sloppy. I am now at New York on my way to Pennsylvania. N. B. This journey into Pennsylvania had, for its principal object, an appeal to the justice of the Legislature of that state for redress for great loss and injury sustained by me, nearly twenty years ago, in consequence of the tyranny of one M'KEAN, who was then the Chief Justice of that State. The appeal has not yet been successful; but, as I confidently expect, that it finally will, I shall not, at present, say any thing more on the subject. My journey was productive of much and various observation, and, I trust, of useful knowledge. But, in this place, I shall do little more than give an account of the weather; reserving for the Second Part, accounts of prices of land, &c. which will there come under their proper heads.
 - 11. Frost but not hard. Now at New York.

12. Very sharp frost. Set off for Philadelphia.

Broke down on the road in New Jersey.

13. Very hard frost still. Found the Delaware, which divides New Jersey from Pennsylvania, frozen over. Good roads now. Arrived at Philadelphia in the evening.

14. Same whether.

by every one in Philadelphia is, "Don't you think the "city greatly improved?" They seem to me to confound augmentation with improvement. It always was a fine city, since I first knew it; and it is very greatly augmented. It has, I believe, nearly doubled its extent and number of houses since the year 1799. But, after being, for so long a time, familiar with London, every other place appears little. After living within a few hundreds of yards of Westminster-Hall and the Abbey Church and the Bridge, and looking from my own windows into St. James's Park, all other buildings and spots appear mean and insignificant. I went to

day to see the house I formerly occupied. How small! It is always thus: the words large and small are carried about with us in our minds, and we forget real dimensions. The idea, such as it was received, remains during our absence from the object. When I returned to England, in 1800, after an absence from the country parts of it, of sixteen years, the trees, the hedges, even the parks and woods, seemed so small! It made me laugh to hear little gutters, that I could jump over, called Rivers! The Thames was but a "Creek!" But, when, in about a month after my arrival in London, I went to Farnham, the place of my birth, what was my surprise! Every thing was become so pitifully small! I had to cross, in my post-chaise, the long and dreary heath of Bagshot. Then, at the end of it, to mount a hill, called Hungry Hill; and from that hill I knew that I should look down into the beautiful and fertile vale of Farnham. My heart fluttered with impatience, mixed with a sort of fear, to see all the scenes of my childhood; for I had learnt before, the death of my father and mother. There is a hill, not far from the town, called Crooksbury Hill, which rises up out of a flat, in the form of a cone, and is planted with Scotch fir-trees. Here I used to take the eggs and young ones of crows and magpies. This hill was a famous object in the neighbourhood. It served as the superlative degree of height. " As high as Crooksbury Hill" meant, with us, the utmost degree of height. Therefore, the first object that my eyes sought was this hill. I could not believe my eyes! Literally speaking, I for a moment, thought the famous hill removed, and a little heap put in its stead; for I had seen in New Brunswick, a single rock. or hill of solid rock, ten times as big, and four or five times as high! The post-boy, going down hill, and not a bad road, whisked me, in a few minutes to the Bush Inn, from the garden of which I could see the prodigious sand hill, where I had begun my gardening works. What a nothing! But now came rushing into my mind, all at once, my pretty little garden, my little blue smock-frock, my little nailed shoes, my pretty pigeons that I used to feed out of my hands, the last kind words and tears of my gentle and tender-hearted and affectionate mother! I hastened back into the room. If I had looked a moment longer, I should have dropped. When I came to reflect, what a change! I looked down at my dress. What a change! What scenes I had gone through! How altered my state! I had dined the day before at a Secretary of State's in company with Mr. Pitt, and had been waited upon by men in gaudy liveries! I had had nobody to assist me in the world. No teachers of any sort. Nobody to shelter me from the consequence of bad, and no one to counsel me to good, behaviour. I felt proud. The distinctions of rank, birth, and wealth, all became nothing in my eyes; and from that moment (less than a month after my arrival in England) I resolved never to bend before them.

16. Same weather. Went to see my old Quaker-friends at Bustleton, and particularly my beloved friend James Paul, who is very ill.

17. Returned to Philadelphia. Little frost and a

little snow.

18, 19, 20 & 21. Moderate frost. Fine clear sky. The Philadelphians are cleanly, a quality which they owe chiefly to the Quakers. But, after being long and recently familiar with the towns in Surrey and Hampshire, and especially with Guildford, Alton, and Southampton, no other towns appear clean and neat, not even Bath or Salisbury, which last is much about upon a par. in point of cleanliness, with Philadelphia; and, Salisbury is deemed a very cleanly place. Blandford and Dorchester are clean; but, I have never yet seen any thing like the towns in Surrey and Hampshire. If a Frenchman, born and bred, could be taken up and carried blindfold to Guildford, I wonder what his sensations would be, when he came to have the use of his sight! Every thing near Guildford seems to have received an influence from the town. Hedges, gates, stiles, gardens, houses inside and out, and the dresses of the people. The market day at Guildford is a perfect show of cleanliness. Not even a carter without a clean smockfrock and closely-shaven and clean-washed face. Well may Mr. Birkbeck, who came from this very spot, think the people dirty in the western country! I'll engage

C

he finds more dirt upon the necks and faces of one family of his present neighbours, than he left behind him upon the skins of all the people in the three parishes of Guildford. However, he would not have found this to be the case in Pennsylvania, and especially in those parts where the Quakers abound; and, I am told, that, in the New England States, the people are as cleanly and as neat as they are in England. The sweetest flowers, when they become putrid, stink the most; and, a nasty woman is the nastiest thing in nature.

22. Hard frost. My business in Pennsylvania is with the legislature. It is sitting at Harrisburgh. Set off to-day by stage. Fine country; fine barns; fine farms. Must speak particularly of these in another place. Got to Lancaster. The largest inland town in the United States. A very clean and good town. No beggarly

houses. All looks like ease and plenty.

23. Harder frost, but not very severe. Almost as cold as the weather was during the six weeks' continuance of the snow, in 1814, in England.

24. The same weather continues.

25. A sort of half thaw. Sun warm. HARRISBURGH is a new town, close on the left bank of the river Sus-QUEHANNAH, which is not frozen over, but has large quantities of ice floating on its waters. All vegetation, and all appearance of green, gone away.

26. Mild weather. Hardly any frost.

27. Thaws. Warm. Tired to death of the tavern at Harrisburgh, though a very good one. The cloth spread three times a day. Fish, fowl, meat, cakes, eggs, sausages; all sorts of things in abundance. Board, lodging, civil but not servile waiting on, beer, tea, coffee, chocolate. Price, a dollar and a quarter a day. Here we meet altogether: senators, judges, lawyers, tradesmen, farmers, and all. I am weary of the everlasting loads of meat. Weary of being idle. How few such days have I spent in my whole life!

28. Thaw and rain. My business not coming on, I went to a country tavern, hoping there to get a room to myself, in which to read my English papers, and sit down to writing. I am now at M'Allister's tavern, situated at the foot of the first ridge of mountains; or

rather, upon a little nook of land, close to the river, where the river has found a way through a break in the chain of mountains. Great enjoyment here. Sit and read and write. My mind is again in England. Mrs. M'Allister just suits me. Does not pester me with questions. Does not cram me with meat. Lets me eat and drink what I like, and when I like, and gives mugs of nice milk. I find, here, a very agreeable and instructive occasional companion, in Mr. M'Allister the elder. But, of the various useful information, that I received from him, I must speak in the Second Part of this work.

29. Very hard frost this morning. Change very

sudden. All about the house a glare of ice.

30. Not so hard. Icicles on the trees on the neighbouring mountains like so many millions of sparkling

stones, when the sun shines, which is all the day.

31. Same weather. Two farmers of Lycoming county had heard that William Cobbett was here. They modestly introduced themselves. What a contrast with the "yeomanry cavalry!"

FEBRUARY.

1 & 2. Same weather. About the same as a "hard frost" in England.

3. Snow.

4. Little snow. Not much frost. This day, thirty-three years ago, I enlisted as a soldier. I always keep the day in recollection.

5. Having been to Harrisburgh on the second, returned to M'Allister's to-day in a sleigh. The River begins to be frozen over. It is about a mile wide.

6. Little snow again, and hardish frost.

7. Now and then a little snow.—Talk with some hop-growers. Prodigious crops in this neighbourhood; but, of them in the Second Part. What would a Farnham man think of thirty hundred weight of hops upon four hundred hills, ploughed between, and the ground vines fed off by sheep! This is a very curious and interesting matter.

8. A real Frost.

9. Sharper. They say, that the thermometer is down

to 10 degrees below nought.

10. A little milder; but very cold indeed. The River completely frozen over, and sleighs and foot passengers crossing in all directions.

11. Went back again to Harrisburgh. Mild frost.

12. Not being able to bear the idea of dancing attendance, came to Lancaster, in order to see more of this pretty town. A very fine Tavern (Slaymaker's); room to myself; excellent accommodations. Warm fires. Good and clean beds. Civil but not servile, landlord. The eating still more overdone than at Harrisburgh. Never saw such profusion. I have made a bargain with the landlord: he is to give me a dish of chocolate a day, instead of dinner. Frost, but mild.

13. Rain.—A real rain, but rather cold.

14. A complete day of rain.

15. A hard frost; much about like a hard frost in the naked parts of Wiltshire.—Mr. Hulme joined me on his way to Philadelphia from the city of Washington.

16. A hard frost.—Lancaster is a pretty place. No fine buildings; but no mean ones. Nothing splendid and nothing beggarly. The people of this town seem to have had the prayer of HAGAR granted them: " Give me, O Lord, neither poverty nor riches." Here are none of those poor, wretched habitations, which sicken the sight at the out-skirts of cities and towns in England: those abodes of the poor creatures, who have been reduced to beggary by the cruel extortions of the rich and powerful. And, this remark applies to all the towns of America that I have ever seen. This is a fine part of America. Big Barns, and modest dwelling houses. Barns of stone, a hundred feet long and forty wide, with two floors, and raised roads to go into them, so that the wagons go into the first floor up-stairs. Below are stables, stalls, pens, and all sorts of conveniences. Upstairs are rooms for threshed corn and grain; for tackle, for meal, for all sorts of things. In the front (South) of the barn is the cattle yard. These are very fine buildings. And, then, all about them looks so comfortable, and gives such manifest proofs of ease, plenty, and happiness! Such is the country of WILLIAM PENN's set-

tling! It is a curious thing to observe the farm-houses in this country. They consist, almost without exception, of a considerably large and a very neat house, with sash windows, and of a small house, which seems to have been tacked on to the large one; and, the proportion they bear to each other, in point of dimensions, is, as nearly as possible, the proportion of size between a Cow and her Calf, the latter a month old. But, as to the cause, the process has been the opposite of this instance of the works of nature, for, it is the large house which has grown out of the small one. The father, or grandfather, while he was toiling for his children, lived in the small house, constructed chiefly by himself, and consisting of rude materials. The means, accumulated in the small house, enabled a son to rear the large one; and, though, when pride enters the door, the small house is sometimes demolished, few sons in America have the folly or want of feeling to commit such acts of filial ingratitude, and of real self-abasement. For, what inheritance so valuable and so honourable can a son enjoy as the proofs of his father's industry and virtue? The progress of wealth and ease and enjoyment, evinced by this regular increase of the size of the farmer's dwellings, is a spectacle, at once pleasing, in a very high degree, in itself, and, in the same degree, it speaks the praise of the system of government, under which it has taken place. What a contrast with the farm-houses in England! There the little farm-houses are falling into ruins, or, are actually become cattle-sheds, or, at best, cottages, as they are called, to contain a miserable labourer, who ought to have been a farmer, as his grandfather was. Five or six farms are there now levelled into one, in defiance of the law; for, there is a law to prevent it. The farmer, has, indeed, a fine house; but, what a life do his labourers lead! The cause of this sad change is to be found in the crushing taxes; and the cause of them, in the Borough usurpation, which has robbed the people of their best right, and, indeed, without which right they can enjoy no other. They talk of the augmented population of England; and, when it suits the purposes of the tyrants, they boast of this fact, as they are pleased to call it, as a proof of

the fostering nature of their government; though, just now, they are preaching up the vile and foolish doctrine of PARSON MALTHUS, who thinks, that there are too many people, and that they ought (those who labour, at least) to be restrained from breeding so fast. But, as to the fact, I do not believe it. There can be nothing in the shape of proof; for no actual enumeration was ever taken till the year 1800. We know well, that London, Manchester, Birmingham, Bath, Portsmouth, Plymouth, and all Lancashire and Yorkshire, and some other counties, have got a vast increase of miserable beings huddled together. But, look at Devonshire, Somersetshire, Dorsetshire, Wiltshire, Hampshire, and other counties. You will there see hundreds of thousands of acres of land, where the old marks of the plough are visible, but which have not been cultivated for, perhaps, half a century. You will there see places, that were once considerable towns and villages, now having, within their ancient limits, nothing but a few cottages, the Parsonage and a single Farm-house. It is a curious and a melancholy sight, where an ancient church, with its lofty spire or tower; the church sufficient to contain a thousand or two or three thousand of people conveniently, now stands surrounded by a score or half a score of miserable mud-houses, with floors of earth, and covered with thatch; and this sight strikes your eye in all parts of the five Western counties of England. Surely these churches were not built without the existence of a population somewhat proportionate to their size! Certainly not; for the churches are of various sizes, and, we sometimes see them very small indeed. Let any man look at the sides of the hills in these counties, and also in Hampshire, where downs, or open lands, prevail. He will there see, not only that those hills were formerly cultivated; but, that banks, from distance to distance, were made by the spade, in order to form little flats for the plough to go, without tumbling the earth down the hill; so that the side of a hill looks, in some sort, like the steps of a stairs. Was this done without hands, and without mouths to consume the grain raised on the sides of these hills? The Funding and Manufacturing and Commercial and Taxing

System has, by drawing wealth into great masses, drawn men also into great masses. London, the manufacturing places, Bath, and other places of dissipation, have, indeed, wonderfully increased in population. Country seats, Parks, Pleasure-gardens, have, in like degree, increased in number and extent. And, in just the same proportion has been the increase of Poor-houses, Madhouses, and Jails. But, the people of England, such as Fortescue described them, have been swept away by the ruthless hand of the Aristocracy, who, making their approaches by slow degrees, have, at last, got into their grasp the substance of the whole country.

17. Frost, not very hard. Went back to Harris-

burgh.

18. Same weather. Very fine. Warm in the mid-

dle of the day.

19. Same weather.—Quitted Harrisburgh, very much displeased; but, on this subject, I shall, if possible, keep silence, till next year, and until the People of Pennsylvania have had time to reflect; to clearly understand my affair; and when they do understand it, I am not at all afraid of receiving justice at their hands, whether I am present or absent. Slept at Lancaster.

One night more in this very excellent Tavern.

20. Frost still. Arrived at Philadelphia along with my friend Hulme. They are roasting an ox on the Delaware. The fooleries of England are copied here, and every where in this country, with wonderful avidity; and, I wish I could say, that some of the vices of our "higher orders," as they have the impudence to call themselves, were not also imitated. However, I look principally at the mass of farmers; the sensible and happy farmers of America.

21. Thaw and Rain.—The severe weather is over

for this year.

22. Thaw and Rain. A solid day of rain.

23. Little frost at night. Fine market. Fine meat of all sorts. As fat mutton as I ever saw. How mistaken Mr. Birkbeck is about American mutton!

24. Same weather. Very fair days now.

25. Went to Bustleton with my old friend, Mr. John Morgan.

26. Returned to Philadelphia. Roads very dirty and heavy.

27. Complete thaw; but it will be long before the

frost be out of the ground.

28. Same weather. Very warm. I hate this weather. Hot upon my back, and melting ice under my The people (those who have been lazy) are chopping away with axes the ice, which has grown out of the snows and rains, before their doors, during the winter. The hogs (best of scavengers) are very busy in the streets seeking out the bones and bits of meat, which have been flung out and frozen down amidst water and snow, during the two foregoing months. I mean including the present month. At New York (and, I think, at Philadelphia also) they have corporation laws to prevent hogs from being in the streets. For what reason, I know not, except putrid meat be pleasant to the smell of the inhabitants. But, Corporations are seldom the wisest of lawmakers. It is argued, that, if there were no hogs in the streets, people would not throw out their orts of flesh and vegetables. Indeed! What would they do with those orts, then? Make their hired servants eat them? The very proposition would leave them to cook and wash for themselves. Where, then, are they to fling these effects of superabundance? Just before I left New York for Philadelphia, I saw a sow very comfortably dining upon a full quarter part of what appeared to have been a fine leg of mutton. How many a family in England would, if within reach, have seized this meat from the sow! And, are the tyrants, who have brought my industrious countrymen to that horrid state of misery, never to be called to account? Are they always to carry it as they now do? Every object almost, that strikes my view, sends my mind and heart back to England. In viewing the ease and happiness of this people, the contrast fills my soul with indignation, and makes it more and more the object of my life to assist in the destruction of the diabolical usurpation, which has trampled on king as well as people.

MARCH.

1. Rain. Dined with my old friend Severne, an honest Norfolk man, who used to carry his milk about the streets, when I first knew him, but, who is now a man of considerable property, and, like a wise man, lives in the same modest house where he formerly lived. Excellent roast beef and plum pudding. At his house I found an Englishman, and from Botley too! I had been told of such a man being in Philadelphia, and that the man said, that he had heard of me, " heard of such a gentleman, but did not know much of him." This was odd! I was desirous of seeing this man. Mr. Se-VERNE got him to his house. His name is VERE. I knew him the moment I saw him; and, I wondered why it was that he knew so little of me. I found, that he wanted work, and that he had been assisted by some society in Philadelphia. He said he was lame and he might be a little, perhaps. I offered him work at once. No: he wanted to have the care of a farm! "Go," said I, " for shame, and ask some farmers for work. "You will find it immediately, and with good wages. "What should the people in this country see in your " face to induce them to keep you in idleness? They did " not send for you. You are a young man, and you come "from a country of able labourers. You may be rich "if you will work. This gentleman who is now about to " cram you with roast beef and plum pudding came to "this city nearly as poor as you are; and, I first came "to this country in no better plight. Work, and I " wish you well; be idle, and you ought to starve." He told me, then, that he was a hoop-maker; and yet, observe, he wanted to have the care of a farm.

N. B. If this book should ever reach the hands of Mr. Richard Hinxman, my excellent good friend of Chilling, I beg him to show this note to Mr. Nicholas Freemantle of Botley. He will know well all about this Vere. Tell Mr. Freemantle, that the Spaniels are beautiful, that Woodcocks breed here in abundance; and tell him, above all, that I frequently think of him as a pattern of industry in business, of skill and perseverance and good humour as a sportsman, and of

honesty and kindness as a neighbour. Indeed, I have pleasure in thinking of all my Botley neighbours, except the Parson, who for their sakes, I wish, however, was my neighbour now; for here he might pursue his calling very quietly.

2. Open weather. Went to Bustleton, after having seen Messrs. Stevens and Pendrill, and advised them to forward to me affidavits of what they knew about

OLIVER, the spy of the Boroughmongers.

3. Frost in the morning. Thaw in the day.
4. Same weather in the night. Rain all day.

5. Hard frost. Snow three inches deep.

6. Hard frost. About as cold as a hard frost in January in England.

7. Same weather.

8. Thaw. Dry and fine.

9. Same weather. Took leave, I fear for ever, of my old and kind friend, James Paul. His brother and son promised to come and see me here. I have pledged myself to transplant 10 acres of Indian Corn; and, if I write, in August, and say that it is good, Thomas Paul has promised that he will come; for, he thinks

that the scheme is a mad one.

10. Same weather.-Mr. VAREE, a son-in-law of Mr. James Paul, brought me yesterday to another sonin-law's, Mr. EZRA TOWNSHEND at BIBERY. Here I am amongst the thick of the Quakers, whose houses and families pleased me so much formerly, and which pleasure is all now revived. Here all is ease, plenty, and cheerfulness. These people are never giggling, and never in low-spirits. Their minds, like their dress, are simple and strong. Their kindness is shown more in acts than in words. Let others say what they will, I have uniformly found those whom I have intimately known of this sect, sincere and upright men; and I verily believe, that all those charges of hypocrisy and craft, that we hear against Quakers, arise from a feeling of envy; envy inspired by seeing them possessed of such abundance of all those things, which are the fair fruits of care, industry, economy, sobriety and order, and which are justly forbidden to the drunkard, the glutton, the prodigal, and the lazy. As the day of my

coming to Mr. Townshend's had been announced beforehand, several of the young men, who were babies when I used to be there formerly, came to see "BILLY COBBETT," of whom they had heard and read so much. When I saw them and heard them, "What a contrast," said I to myself, "with the senseless, gaudy, upstart, "hectoring, insolent, and cruel Yeomanry Cavalry in " England, who, while they grind their labourers into "the revolt of starvation, gallantly sally forth with their " sabres, to chop them down at the command of a Se-"cretary of State; and, who, the next moment, creep " and fawn like spaniels before their Boroughmonger "Landlords!" At Mr. Townshend's I saw a man, in his service, lately from YORKSHIRE, but an Irishman by birth. He wished to have an opportunity to see me. He had read many of my "little books." I shook him by the hand, told him he had now got a good house over his head and a kind employer, and advised him not to move for one year, and to save his wages during that

11. Same open weather .- I am now at Trenton, in New Jersey, waiting for something to carry me on towards New York .- Yesterday, Mr. Townshend sent me on, under an escort of Quakers, to Mr. ANTHONY TAYLOR'S. He was formerly a merchant in Philadelphia, and now lives in his very pretty country-house, on a very beautiful farm. He has some as fine and fat oxen as we generally see at Smithfield market in London. I think they will weigh sixty score each. Fine farm yard. Every thing belonging to the farm good, but what a neglectful gardener! Saw some white thorns here (brought from England) which, if I had wanted any proof, would have clearly proved to me, that they would, with less care, make as good hedges here as they do at Farnham in Surrey. But in another PART, I shall give full information upon this head. Here my escort quitted me; but, luckily, Mr. NEWBOLD, who lives about ten miles nearer Trenton than Mr. Taylor does, brought me on to his house. He is a much better gardener, or, rather, to speak the truth, has succeeded a better, whose example he has followed in part. But, his farm yard and buildings! This was a sight indeed!

Forty head of horn-cattle in a yard, enclosed with a stone wall; and five hundred merino ewes, besides young lambs, in the finest, most spacious, best contrived, and most substantially built sheds I ever saw. The barn surpassed all that I had seen before. His house (large, commodious, and handsome) stands about two hundred yards from the turnpike road, leading from Philadelphia to New York, and looks on and over the Delaware which runs parallel with the road, and has, surrounding it, and at the back of it, five hundred acres of land, level as a lawn, and two feet deep in loam, that never requires a water furrow. This was the finest sight that I ever saw as to farm-buildings and land. I forgot to observe, that I saw in Mr. TAYLOR's service, another man recently arrived from England. A Yorkshire man. He, too, wished to see me. He had got some of my " little books," which he had preserved, and brought out with him. Mr. TAYLOR was much pleased with him. An active, smart man; and, if he follow my advice, to remain a year under one roof, and save his wages, he will, in a few years, be a rich man. These men must be brutes indeed not to be sensible of the great kindness and gentleness and liberality, with which they are treated. Mr. TAYLOR came, this morning, to Mr. Newbold's, and brought me on to Tren-TON. I am at the stage-tavern, where I have just dined upon cold ham, cold veal, butter and cheese, and a peach-pye; nice clean room, well furnished, waiter clean and attentive, plenty of milk; and charge, a quarter of a dollar! I thought, that Mrs. Joslin at Princestown (as I went on to Philadelphia), Mrs. Benler at Harrisburgh, Mr. Slaymaker at Lancaster, and Mrs. M'ALLISTER, were low enough in all conscience; but, really, this charge of Mrs. Anderson beats all. I had not the face to pay the waiter a quarter of a dollar; but gave him half a dollar, and told him to keep the change. He is a black man. He thanked me. But, they never ask for any thing. But, my vehicle is come, and now I bid adieu to Trenton, which I should have liked better, if I had not seen so many young fellows lounging about the streets, and leaning against doorposts, with quids of tobacco in their mouths, or segars

stuck between their lips, and with dirty hands and faces. Mr. Birkbeck's complaint, on this score, is per-

fectly just,

Brunswick, New Jersey. Here I am, after a ride of about 30 miles, since two o'clock, in what is called a Jersey-waggon, through such mud as I never saw before. Up to the stock of the wheel; and yet a pair of very little horses have dragged us through it in the space of five hours. The best horses and driver, and the worst roads I ever set my eyes on. This part of Jersey is a sad spectacle, after leaving the brightest of all the bright parts of Pennsylvania. My driver, who is a tavern-keeper himself, would have been a very pleasant companion, if he had not drunk so much spirits on the road. This is the great misfortune of America! As we were going up a hill very slowly, I could perceive him looking very hard at my cheek for some time. At last, he said: "I am wondering, Sir, to see you "look so fresh and so young, considering what you " have gone through in the world;" though I cannot imagine how he had learnt who I was. "I'll tell you," said I, "how I have contrived the thing. I rise early, " go to bed early, eat sparingly, never drink any thing " stronger than small beer, shave once a day, and wash " my hands and face clean three times a day, at the very "least." He said, that was too much to think of doing.

12. Warm and fair. Like an English first of May in point of warmth. I got to Elizabeth Town Point through beds of mud. Twenty minutes too late for the steam-boat. Have to wait here at the tavern till tomorrow. Great mortification. Supped with a Connecticut farmer, who was taking on his daughter to Little York in Pennsylvania. The rest of his family he took on in the fall. He has migrated. His reasons were these: he has five sons, the eldest 19 years of age, and several daughters. Connecticut is thickly settled. He has not the means to buy farms for the sons there. He, therefore, goes and gets cheap land in Pennsylvania; his sons will assist him to clear it: and, thus, they will have a farm each. To a man in such circumstances, and "born with an axe in one " hand, and a gun in the other," the western countries

are desirable; but not to English farmers, who have great skill in fine cultivation, and who can purchase near New York or Philadelphia. This Yankee (the inhabitants of Connecticut, Rhode Island, Massachusetts and New Hampshire, only, are called Yankees) was about the age of Sir Francis Burdett, and, if he had been dressed in the usual clothes of Sir Francis, would have passed for him. Features, hair, eyes, height, make, manner, look, hasty utterance at times, musical voice, frank deportment, pleasant smile. All the very fac-simile of him. I had some early York cabbage-seed and some cauliflower-seed in my pocket, which had been sent me from London, in a letter, and which had reached me at Harrisburgh. I could not help giving him a little of each.

13. Same weather. A fine open day. Rather a cold May-day for England. Came to New York by the steam-boat. Over to this island by another, took a little light wagon, that whisked me home over roads as dry and as smooth as gravel walks in an English bishop's garden in the month of July. Great contrast with the bottomless muds of New Jersey! As I came along, saw those fields of rye, which were so green in December, now white. Not a single sprig of green on the face of the earth. Found that my man had ploughed ten acres of ground. The frost not quite clean out of the ground. It has penetrated two feet eight inches. The weather here has been nearly about the same as in

Pennsylvania; only less snow, and less rain.

14. Open weather. Very fine. Not quite so warm. 15. Same weather. Young chickens. I hear of no other in the neighbourhood. This is the effect of my warm fowl-house! The house has been supplied with eggs all the winter, without any interruption. I am told, that this has been the case at no other house hereabouts. We have now an abundance of eggs. More than a large family can consume. We send some to market. The fowls, I find, have wanted no feeding except during the snow, or, in the very, very cold days, when they did not come out of their house all the day. A certain proof that they like the warmth.

16. Little frost in the morning. Very fine day.

17. Precisely same weather.

18 & 19. Same weather.

20. Same weather. Opened several pits, in which I had preserved all sorts of garden-plants and roots, and apples. Valuable experiments. As useful in England as here, though not so absolutely necessary. I shall communicate these in another part of my work, under the head of *Gardening*.

21. Same weather. The day like a fine May-day in England. I am writing without fire, and in my

waistcoat without coat.

22. Rain all last night, and all this day.

23. Mild and fine. A sow had a litter of pigs in the leaves under the trees. Judge of the weather by this. The wind blows cold; but, she has drawn together great heaps of leaves, and protects her young ones with surprising sagacity and exemplary care and fondness.

24. Same weather.25. Still mild and fair.

26. Very cold wind. We try to get the sow and pigs into the buildings. But the pigs do not follow, and we cannot, with all our temptations of corn and all our caresses, get the sow to move without them by her side. She must remain 'till they choose to travel. How does nature, through the conduct of this animal, reproach those mothers, who cast off their new-born infants to depend on a hireling's breast! Let every young man, before he marry, read, upon this subject, the pretty poem of Mr. Roscoe, called "the Nurse;" and, let him also read, on the same subject, the eloquent, beautiful, and soul-affecting passage, in Rousseau's "Emile."

27. Fine warm day. Then high wind, rain, snow, and hard frost before morning.

28. Hard frost. Snow 3 inches deep.

29. Frost in the night; but, all thawed in the day, and very warm.

30. Frost in night. Fine warm day.

31. Fine warm day. As the winter is now gone, let us take a look back at its inconveniences compared with those of an English Winter. We have had three months of it; for, if we had a few sharp days in De-

cember, we have had many very fine and without fire in March. In England, winter really begins in November, and does not end 'till Mid-March. Here we have greater cold; there, four times as much wet. I have had my great coat on only twice, except when sitting in a stage, travelling. I have had gloves on no oftener; for, I do not, like the Clerks of the House of Boroughmongers, write in gloves. I seldom meet a wagoner with gloves or great coat on. It is generally so dry. This is the great friend of man and beast. Last summer I wrote home for nails to nail my shoes for winter. I could find none here. What a foolish people, not to have shoe-nails! I forgot, that it was likely, that the absence of shoe-nails argued an absence of the want of them. The nails are not come; and I have not wanted them. There is no dirt, except for about ten days at the breaking up of the frost. dress of a labourer does not cost half so much as in England. This dryness is singularly favourable to all animals. They are hurt far less by dry cold, than by warm drip, drip, drip, as it is in England. There has been nothing green in the garden, that is to say, above ground, since December; but, we have had, all winter, and have now, white cabbages, green savoys, parsnips, carrots, beets, young onions, radishes, white turnips, Swedish turnips, and potatoes; and all these in abundance (except radishes, which were a few to try), and always at hand at a minute's warning. The modes of preserving will be given in another part of the work. What can any body want more than these things in the garden way? However, it would be very easy to add to the catalogue. Apples, quinces, cherries, currants, peaches, dried in the Summer, and excellent for tarts and pies. Apples in their raw state, as many as we please. My own stock being gone, I have trucked turnips for apples; and shall thus have them, if I please, 'till apples come again on the trees. I give two bushels and a half of Swedish turnips for one of apples: and, mind, this is on the last day of March. I have here stated facts, whereby to judge of the winter; and I leave the English reader to judge for himself, I myself decidedly preferring the American winter.

APRIL.

- 1. Very fine and warm.
- 2 & 3. Same weather.

4. Rain all day.

- 5. Rain all day. Our cistern and pool full.6. Warm, but no sun. Turkeys begin to lay.
- 7. Same weather. My first spring operations in gardening are now going on; but I must reserve an account of them for another Part of my work.

8. Warm and fair.

9. Rain and rather cold.

10. Fair but cold. It rained but yesterday, and we are to-day feeding sheep and lambs with grain of corn, and with oats, upon the ground in the orchard. Judge, then, of the cleanness and convenience of this soil!

11. Fine and warm.

12 & 13. Warm and fair.

14. Drying wind and miserably cold. Fires again in day-time, which I have not had for some days past.

15. Warm, like a fine May-day in England. We

are planting out selected roots for seed.

16. Rain all last night. Warm. Very fine indeed.

17. Fine warm day. Heavy thunder and rain at night. The Martins (not swallows) are come into the barn and are looking out sites for the habitations of

their future young ones.

18. Cold and raw. Damp, too, which is extremely rare. The worst day I have yet seen during the year. Stops the grass, stops the swelling of the buds. The young chickens hardly peep out from under the wings of the hens. The lambs don't play, but stand knit up. The pigs growl and squeak; and the birds are gone away to the woods again.

19. Same weather with an Easterly wind. Just such a wind as that, which, in March, brushes round the corners of the streets of London, and makes the old, muffled-up debauchees hurry home with aching joints.

Some hail to-day,

20. Same weather. Just the weather to give drunkards the "blue devils."

21. Frost this morning. Ice as thick as a dollar. Snow three times. Once to cover the ground. Went off again directly.

22. Frost and ice in the morning. A very fine day,

but not warm. Dandelions blow.

23. Sharp white frost in morning. Warm and fine

day.

24. Warm night, warm and fair day. And here I close my Journal; for, I am in haste to get my manuscript away; and there now wants only ten days to complete the year. I resume, now, the Numbering of my Paragraphs, having begun my Journal at the close of Paragraph No. 20.

21. Let us, now, take a survey, or rather glance, at the face, which nature now wears. The grass begins to afford a good deal for sheep and for my grazing English pigs, and the cows and oxen get a little food from it. The pears, apples, and other fruit-trees, have not made much progress in the swelling or bursting of their buds. The buds of the weeping-willow have bursted (for, in spite of that conceited ass, Mr. JAMES PERRY, to burst is a regular verb, and vulgar pedants only make it irregular), and those of a Lilac, in a warm place, are almost bursted, which is a great deal better than to say, "almost burst." Oh, the coxcomb! As if an absolute pedagogue like him could injure me by his criticisms! And, as if an error like this, even if it had been one, could have any thing to do with my capacity for developing principles, and for simplifying things, which, in their nature, are of great complexity! The oaks, which, in England, have now their sap in full flow, are here quite unmoved as yet. In the gardens in general there is nothing green, while, in England, they have broccoli to eat, early cabbages planted out, coleworts to eat, peas four or five inches high. Yet, we shall have green peas and loaved cabbages as soon as they will. We have sprouts from the cabbagestems preserved under cover; the Swedish turnip is giving me greens from bulbs planted out in March; and I have some broccoli too, just coming on for use.

How I have got this broccoli I must explain in my Gardener's Guide; for write one I must. I never can leave this country without an attempt to make every farmer a gardener. In the meat way, we have beef, mutton, bacon, fowls, a calf to kill in a fortnight's time, sucking-pigs when we choose, lamb nearly fit to kill; and all of our own breeding, or our own feeding. We kill an ox, send three quarters and the hide to market and keep one quarter. Then a sheep, which we use in the same way. The bacon is always ready. Some fowls always fatting. Young ducks are just coming out to meet the green peas. Chickens (the earliest) as big as American Partridges (misnamed quails,) are ready for the asparagus, which is just coming out of the ground. Eggs at all times more than we can consume. And, if there be any one, who wants better fare than this, let the grumbling glutton come to that poverty, which Solomon has said shall be his lot. And, the great thing of all, is, that here, every man, even every labourer, may live as well as this, if he will be sober and industrious.

22. There are two things, which I have not yet mentioned, and which are almost wholly wanting here, while they are so amply enjoyed in England. The singing-birds and the flowers. Here are many birds in summer, and some of very beautiful plumage. There are some wild flowers, and some English flowers in the best gardens. But, generally speaking, they are birds without song, and flowers without smell. The linnet (more than a thousand of which I have heard warbling upon one scrubbed oak on the sand-hills in Surrey,) the sky-lark, the goldfinch, the wood-lark, the nightingale, the bull-finch, the black-bird, the thrush, and all the rest of the singing tribe are wanting in these beautiful woods and orchards of garlands. When these latter have dropped their bloom, all is gone in the flowery way. No shepherd's rose, no honey-suckle, none of that endless variety of beauties that decorate the hedges and the meadows in England. No daisies, no primroses, no cowslips, no blue-bells, no daffodils, which, as if it were not enough for them to charm the sight and the smell, must have names, too, to delight

the ear. All these are wanting in America. Here are, indeed, birds, which bear the name of robin, blackbird, thrush, and goldfinch; but, alas! the thing at Westminster has, in like manner, the name of parliament, and speaks the voice of the people, whom it pretends to represent, in much about the same degree that the black-bird here speaks the voice of its namesake in

England.

23. Of health, I have not yet spoken, and, though it will be a subject of remark in another part of my work, it is a matter of too deep interest to be wholly passed over here. In the first place, as to myself, I have always had excellent health; but, during a year, in England, I used to have a cold or two; a trifling sore throat; or something in that way. Here, I have neither, though I was more than two months of the winter travelling about, and sleeping in different beds. My family have been more healthy than in England, though, indeed, there has seldom been any serious illness in it. We have had but one visit from any Doctor. Thus much, for the present, on this subject. I said, in the second Register I sent home, that this climate was not so good as that of England. Experience, observation, a careful attention to real facts, have convinced me that it is, upon the whole, a better climate; though I tremble lest the tools of the Boroughmongers should cite this as a new and most flagrant instance of inconsistency. England is my country, and to England I shall return. I like it best, and shall always like it best; but, then, in the word England, many things are included besides climate and soil and seasons, and eating and drinking.

24. In the Second Part of this work, which will follow the First Part in the course of two months, I shall take particular pains to detail all that is within my knowledge, which I think likely to be useful to persons who intend coming to this country from England. I shall take every particular of the expense of supporting a family, and show what are the means to be obtained for that purpose, and how they are to be obtained. My intending to return to England ought to deter no one from coming hither; because, I

was resolved, if I had life, to return, and I expressed that resolution before I came away. But, if there are good and virtuous men, who can do no good there, and who, by coming hither can withdraw the fruits of their honest labour from the grasp of the Borough tyrants, I am bound, if I speak of this country at all, to tell them the real truth; and this, as far as I have gone, I have now done.

CHAP. II.

RUTA BAGA.

CULTURE, MODE OF PRESERVING, AND USES OF THE RUTA BAGA, sometimes CALLED THE RUSSIA, AND SOMETIMES THE SWEDISH TURNIP.

Description of the Plant.

25. It is my intention, as notified in the public papers, to put into print an account of all the experiments, which I have made, and shall make in Farming and in Gardening upon this Island. I, several years ago, long before tyranny showed its present horrid front in England, formed the design of sending out, to be published in this country, a treatise on the cultivation of the root and green crops, as cattle, sheep, and hog food. This design was suggested by the reading of the following passage in Mr. Chancellor Livingston's Essay on Sheep, which I received in 1812. After having stated the most proper means to be employed in order to keep sheep and lambs during the winter months, he adds: " Having brought our flocks through " the winter, we come now to the most critical season, that " is, the latter end of March and the month of April. At " this time the ground being bare, the sheep will refuse " to eat their hay, while the scanty picking of grass, and

" its purgative quality, will disable them from taking "the nourishment that is necessary to keep them up. " If they fall away, their wool will be injured, and the " growth of their lambs will be stopped, and even many " of the old sheep will be carried off by the dysentery. " To provide food for this season is very difficult. " Turnips and Cabbages will rot, and bran they will " not eat, after having been fed on it all the winter. " Potatoes, however, and the Swedish Turnip, called " Ruta Baga, may be usefully applied at this time, " and so, I think, might Parsnips and Carrots. But, " as few of us are in the habit of cultivating these " plants to the extent which is necessary for the sup-"port of a large flock, we must seek resources more "within our reach." And then the Chancellor proceeds to recommend the leaving the second growth of clover uncut, in order to produce early shoots from sheltered buds for the sheep to eat until the coming of the natural grass and the general pasturage.

26. I was much surprised at reading this passage; having observed, when I lived in Pennsylvania, how prodigiously the root-crops of every kind flourished and succeeded with only common skill and care; and, in 1815, having by that time had many crops of Ruta Baga exceeding thirty tons, or, about one thousand five hundred heaped bushels to the acre, at Botley, I formed the design of sending out to America a Treatise on the Culture and Uses of that Root, which, I was perfectly well convinced, could be raised with more ease here than in England; and, that it might be easily preserved during the whole year, if necessary, I had proved in

many cases.

27. If Mr. Chancellor Livingston, whose publicspirit is manifested fully in his excellent little work, which he modestly calls an Essay, could see my ewes and lambs, and hogs and cattle, at this "critical season" (I write on the 27th of March), with more Ruta Baga at their command than they have mouths to employ on it; if he could see me, who am on a poor exhausted piece of land, and who found it covered with weeds and brambles in the month of June last, who found no manure, and who have brought none; if he could see me overstocked, not with mouths, but with food, owing to a little care in the cultivation of this invaluable root, he would, I am sure, have reason to be convinced, that, if any farmer in the United States is in want of food at this pinching season of the year, the

fault is neither in the soil nor in the climate.

28. It is, therefore, of my mode of cultivating this root on this Island that I mean, at present, to treat; to which matter I shall add, in another Part of my work, an account of my experiments as to the Mangel Wurzel, or Scarcity root; though, as will be seen, I deem that root, except in particular cases, of very inferior importance. The parsnip, the carrot, the cabbage, are all excellent in their kind and in their uses; but, as to these, I have not yet made, upon a scale sufficiently large here, such experiments as would warrant me in speaking with any degree of confidence. Of these, and other matters, I propose to treat in a future Part, which I shall, probably, publish towards the latter end of this present year.

29. The Ruta Baga is a sort of turnip well known in the State of New York, where, under the name of Russia turnip, it is used for the Table from February to July. But, as it may be more of a stranger in other parts of the country, it seems necessary to give it enough of description to enable every reader to distin-

guish it from every other sort of turnip.

30. The leaf of every other sort of turnip is of a yellowish green, while the leaf of the Ruta Baga is of a blueish green, like the green of peas, when of nearly their full size, or like the green of a young and thrifty early Yorkshire cabbage. Hence it is, I suppose, that some persons have called it the Cabbage-turnip. But the characteristics the most decidedly distinctive are these:—that the outside of the bulb of the Ruta Baga is of a greenish hue, mixed, towards the top, with a colour bordering on a red; and, that the inside of the bulb, if the sort be true and pure, is of a deep yellow, nearly as deep as that of gold.

Mode of saving and of preserving the Seed.

31. This is rather a nice business, and should be, by no means, executed in a negligent manner. For, on the well attending to this, much of the seed depends: and, it is quite surprising how great losses are, in the end, frequently sustained by the saving in this part of the business, of an hour's labour or attention. I one year lost more than half of what would have been an immense crop, by a mere piece of negligence in my bailiff as to the seed: and I caused a similar loss to a gentleman in Berkshire, who had his seed out of the same parcel that mine was taken from, and who had sent many miles for it, in order to have the best in the world.

32. The Ruta Baga is apt to degenerate, if the seed be not saved with care. We, in England, select the plants to be saved for seed. We examine well to find out those that run least into neck and green. We reject all such as approach at all towards a whitish colour, or which are even of a greenish colour towards the neck.

where there ought to be a little reddish cast.

33. Having selected the plants with great care, we take them up out of the place where they have grown, and plant them in a plot distant from every thing of the turnip or cabbage kind which is to bear seed. In this Island, I am now, at this time, planting mine for seed (27th March,) taking all our English precautions. It is probable, that they would do very well, if taken out of a heap to be transplanted, if well selected; but, lest this should not do well, I have kept my selected plants all the winter in the ground in my garden, well covered with corn-stalks and leaves from the trees; and, indeed, this is so very little a matter to do, that it would be monstrous to suppose, that any farmer would neglect it on account of the labour and trouble; especially when we consider, that the seed of two or three turnips is more than sufficient to sow an acre of land. I, on one occasion, planted twenty turnips for seed, and the produce, besides what the little birds took as their share for having

kept down the caterpillars, was twenty-two and a half

pounds of clean seed.

34. The sun is so ardent and the weather so fair here, compared with the drippy and chilly climate of England, while the birds here never touch this sort of seed, that a small plot of ground would, if well managed, produce a great quantity of seed. Whether it would degenerate is a matter that I have not yet ascertained;

but which I am about to ascertain this year.

and transplanting them are necessary, I know by experience. I, on one occasion, had sown all my own seed, and the plants had been carried off by the fly, of which I shall have to speak presently. I sent to a person who had raised some seed, which I afterwards found to have come from turnips, left promiscuously to go to seed in a part of a field where they had been sown. The consequence was, that a good third part of my crop had no bulbs; but consisted of a sort of rape, all leaves, and stalks growing very high. While even the rest of the crop bore no resemblance, either in point of size or of quality, to turnips, in the same field, from seed saved in a proper manner, though this latter

was sown at a later period.

36. As to the preserving of the seed, it is an invariable rule applicable to all seeds, that seed, kept in the pod to the very time of sowing, will vegetate more quickly and more vigorously than seed which has been some time threshed out. But, turnip-seed will do very well, if threshed out as soon as ripe, and kept in a dry place, and not too much exposed to the air. A bag, hung up in a dry room, is the depository that I use. But, before being threshed out, the seed should be quite ripe, and, if cut off, or pulled up, which latter is the best way, before the pods are quite dead, the whole should be suffered to lie in the sun till the pods are perfectly dead, in order that the seed may imbibe its full nourishment, and come to complete perfection; otherwise the seed will wither, much of it will not grow at all, and that which does grow will produce plants inferior to those proceeding from well-ripened seed.

Time of Sowing.

37. Our time of sowing in England is from the first to the twentieth of June, though some persons sow in May, which is still better. This was one of the matters of the most deep interest with me, when I came to Hyde Park. I could not begin before the month of June; for I had no ground ready. But, then, I began with great care, on the second of June, sowing, in small plots, once every week, till the 30th of July. In every case the seed took well and the plants grew well; but, having looked at the growth of the plots first sown, and calculated upon the probable advancement of them, I fixed upon the 26th of June for the sowing of my prin-

cipal crop.

38. I was particularly anxious to know, whether this country were cursed with the Turnip fly, which is so destructive in England. It is a little insect about the size of a bed flea, and jumps away from all approaches exactly like that insect. It abounds sometimes, in quantities, so great as to eat up all the young plants, on hundreds and thousands of acres, in a single day. It makes its attack when the plants are in the seed-leaf; and, it is so very generally prevalent, that it is always an even chance, at least, that every field that is sown will be thus wholly destroyed. There is no remedy but that of ploughing and sowing again; and this is frequently repeated three times, and even then there is no crop. Volumes upon volumes have been written on the means of preventing, or mitigating, this calamity; but nothing effectual has ever been discovered; and, at last, the on y means of insuring a crop of Ruta Baga in England, is, to raise the plants in small plots, sown at many different times, in the same manner as cabbages are sown, and, like cabbages, transplant them; of which mode of culture I shall speak by and by. It is very singular, that a field sown one day, wholly escapes, while a field sown the next day, is wholly destroyed. Nay, a part of the same field, sown in the morning, will sometimes escape, while the part, sown in the afternoon, will be destroyed, and, sometimes the afternoon sowing is the part that is spared. To find a remedy for this evil has posed all the

D 2

heads of all the naturalists and chemists of England. As an evil, the smut in wheat; the wire-worm; the grubs above-ground and under-ground; the caterpillars, green and black; the slug, red, black, and grey; though each a great tormentor, are nothing. Against all these there is some remedy, though expensive and plaguing; or, at any rate, their ravages are comparatively slow, and their causes are known. But, the Turnip fly is the English farmer's evil genius. To discover a remedy for, or the cause of, this plague, has been the object of inquiries, experiments, analyses, innumerable. Premium upon premium offered, has only produced pretended remedies, which have led to disappointment and mortification; and, I have no hesitation to say, that, if any man could find out a real remedy, and could communicate the means of cure, while he kept the nature of the means a secret, he would be much richer than he who should discover the longitude; for about fifty thousand farmers would very cheerfully pay him ten guineas a-year each.

39. The reader will easily judge, then, of my anxiety to know, whether this mortal enemy of the farmer existed in Long Island. This was the first question which I put to every one of my neighbours, and I augured good from their not appearing to understand what I meant. However, as my little plots of turnips came up successively, I watched them as our farmers do their fields in England. To my infinite satisfaction, I found that my alarms had been groundless. This circumstance, besides others that I have to mention by and by, gives to the stock-farmer in America so great an advantage over the farmer in England, or in any part of the middle and northern parts of Europe, that it is truly wonderful that the culture of this root has not, long

ago, become general in this country.

40. The time of sowing, then, may be, as circumstances may require, from the 25th of June to about the 10th of July, as the result of my experiments will now show. The plants sown during the first fifteen days of June grew well, and attained great size and weight; but, though they did not actually go off to seed, they were very little short of so doing. They rose into large

and long necks, and sent out sprouts from the upper part of the bulb; and, then, the bulb itself (which is the thing sought after) swelled no more. The substance of the bulb became hard and stringy; and the turnips, upon the whole, were smaller and of greatly inferior quality, compared with those, which were sown at the

proper time.

41. The turnips sown between the 15th and 26th of June, had all these appearances and quality, only in a less degree. But, those which were sown on the 26th of June, were perfect in shape, size, and quality; and, though I have grown them larger in England, it was not done without more manure upon half an acre than I scratched together to put upon seven acres at Hyde Park; but of this I shall speak more particularly when

I come to the quantity of crop.

42. The sowings which were made after the 26th of June, and before the 10th of July, did very well; and, one particular sowing on the 9th of July, on 12 rods, or perches, of ground, sixteen and a half feet to the rod, yielded 62 bushels, leaves and roots cut off, which is after the rate of 992 bushels to an acre. But this sowing was on ground extremely well prepared and sufficiently manured with ashes from burnt earth; a mode of raising manure of which I shall fully treat in a future chapter.

43. Though this crop was so large, sown on the 9th of July, I would by no means recommend any farmer, who can sow sooner, to defer the business to that time; for, I am of opinion, with the old folk in the West of England, that God is almost always on the side of early farmers. Besides, one delay too often produces another delay; and he who puts off to the 9th may put off

to the 19th.

44. The crops in small plots, which I sowed after the 9th of July to the 30th of that month, grew very well; but they regularly succeeded each other in diminution of size; and, which is a great matter, the cold weather overtook them before they were ripe; and ripeness is full as necessary in the case of roots as in the case of apples or of peaches.

Quality and Preparation of the Seed.

depth, and having a porous stratum under it, is best for every thing that vegetates, except plants that live best in water, so it is best for the Ruta Baga. But, I know of no soil in the United States, in which this root may not be cultivated with the greatest facility. A pure sand, or a very stiff clay, would not do well, certainly; but I have never seen any of either in America. The soil that I cultivate is poor almost proverbially; but, what it really is, is this: it is a light loam, approaching towards the sandy. It is of a brownish colour about eight inches deep; then becomes more of a red for about another eight inches; and then comes a mixture of yellowish sand and of pebbles, which continues down to the depth of

many feet.

46. So much for the nature of the land. As to its state, it was that of as complete poverty as can well be imagined. My main crop of Ruta Baga was sown upon two different pieces. One, of about three acres, had borne, in 1816, some Indian corn stalks, together with immense quantities of brambles, grass, and weeds, of all descriptions. The other, of about four acres, had, when I took to it, rye growing on it; but, this rye was so poor, that my neighbour assured me, that it could produce nothing, and he advised me to let the cattle and sheep take it for their trouble of walking over the ground, which advice I readily followed; but, when he heard me say, that I intended to sow Russia turnips on the same ground, he very kindly told me his opinion of the matter, which was, that I should certainly throw my labour wholly away.

47. With these two pieces of ground I went to work early in June. I ploughed them very shallow, thinking to drag the grassy clods up with the harrow, to put them in heaps and burn them, in which case I would (barring the fly!), have pledged my life for a crop of Ruta Baga. It adversely happened to rain, when my clods should have been burnt, and the furrows were so solidly fixed down by the rain, that I could not tear

them up with the harrow; and, besides, my time of sowing came on apace. Thus situated, and having no faith
in what I was told about the dangers of deep ploughing,
I fixed four oxen to a strong plough, and turned up
soil that had not seen the sun for many, many long
years. Another soaking rain came very soon after, and
went, at once, to the bottom of my ploughing, instead
of being carried away instantly by evaporation. I then
harrowed the ground down level, in order to keep it
moist as long as I could; for the sun now began to be
the thing most dreaded.

48. In the meanwhile I was preparing my manure. There was nothing of the kind visible upon the place. But, I had the good luck to follow a person, who appears not to have known much of the use of brooms. By means of sweeping and raking and scratching in and round the house, the barn, the stables, the hen-roost, and the court and yard, I got together about four hundred bushels of not very bad turnip manure. This was not quite 60 bushels to an acre for my seven acres; or,

three gallons to every square rod.

49. However, though I made use of these beggarly means, I would not be understood to recommend the use of such means to others. On the contrary, I should have preferred good and clean land, and plenty of manure: but of this I shall speak again, when I have given an account of the manner of sowing and transplanting.

Manner of Sowing.

50. Thus fitted out with land and manure, I set to the work of sowing, which was performed, with the help of two ploughs and two pair of oxen, on the 25th, 26th, and 27th of June. The ploughmen put the ground up into little ridges having two furrows on each side of the ridge: so that every ridge consisted of four furrows, or turnings over of the plough; and the tops of the ridges were about four feet from each other; and, as the ploughing was performed to a great depth, there was, of course, a very deep gutter between every two ridges.

51. I took care to have the manure placed so as to be under the middle of each ridge; that is to say, just be-

neath where my seed was to come. I had but a very small quantity of seed as well as of manure. This seed I had, however, brought from home, where it was raised by a neighbour, on whom I could rely, and I had no faith in any other. So that I was compelled to bestow it on the ridges with a very parsimonious hand; not having, I believe, more than four pounds to sow on the seven acres. It was sown principally in this manner; a man went along by the side of each ridge, and put down two or three seeds in places at about ten inches from each other, just drawing a little earth over, and pressing it on the seed, in order to make it vegetate quickly before the earth became too dry. This is always a good thing to be done, and especially in dry weather, and under a hot sun. Seeds are very small things; and though, when we see them covered over with earth, we conclude that the earth must touch them closely, we should remember, that a very small cavity is sufficient to keep them untouched nearly all round, in which case, under a hot sun, and near the surface, they are sure to perish, or, at least, to lie long, and until rain come, before they start.

52. I remember a remarkable instance of this in saving some turnips to transplant at Botley. The whole of a piece of ground was sown broad-cast. My gardener had been told to sow in beds, that we might go in to weed the plants; and, having forgotten this till after sowing, he clapped down his line, and divided the plot into beds by treading very hard a little path at the distance of every four feet. The weather was very dry and the wind very keen. It continued so for three weeks; and, at the end of that time, we had scarcely a turnip in the beds, where the ground had been left raked over; but, in the paths we had an abundance, which grew to be very fine, and which, when transplanted, made part of a field which bore thirty-three tons to the acre, and which, as a whole field, was the

finest I ever saw in my life.

53. I cannot help endeavouring to press this fact upon the reader. Squeezing down the earth makes it touch the seed in all its parts, and then it will soon vegetate. It is for this reason, that barley and oat fields

should be rolled, if the weather be dry; and, indeed, that all seeds should be pressed down, if the state of the earth will admit of it.

54. This mode of sowing is neither tedious nor expensive. Two men sowed the whole of my seven acres in the three days, which, when we consider the value of the crop, and the saving in the after-culture, is really not worth mentioning. I do not think, that any sowing by drill is so good, or, in the end, so cheap as this. Drills miss very often in the sowings of such small seeds. However, the thing may be done by hand in a less precise manner. One man would have sown the seven acres in a day, by just scattering the seeds along on the top of the ridge, where they might have been buried with the rake, and pressed down by a spade or shovel or some other flat instrument. A slight roller to take two ridges at once, the horse walking in the gutter between, is what I used to make use of when I sowed on ridges; and, who can want such a roller in America, as long as he has an axe and an auger in his house? Indeed, this whole matter is such a trifle, when compared with the importance of the object, that it is not to be believed, that any man will think it worth the smallest notice as counted amongst the means of obtaining that object.

55. Broad cast sowing will, however, probably be, in most cases, preferred; and, this mode of sowing is pretty well understood from general experience. What is required here, is, that the ground be well ploughed, finely harrowed, and the seeds thinly and evenly sown over it, to the amount of about two pounds of seed to an acre! but, then, if the weather be dry, the seed should, by all means be rolled down. When I have spoken of the after-culture, I shall compare the two methods of sowing, the ridge and the broad-cast, in order that the reader may be the better able to say, which of the

two is entitled to the preference.

After-culture.

56. In relating what I did in this respect, I shall tak it for granted, that the reader will understand me describing what I think ought to be done.

D 5

57. When my ridges were laid up, and my seed was sown, my neighbours thought, that there was an end of the process; for, they all said, that, if the seed ever came up, being upon those high ridges, the plants never could live under the scorching of the sun. I knew that this was an erroneous notion; but I had not much confidence in the powers of the soil, it being so evidently

poor, and my supply of manure so scanty.

sit is a business to be left to no one but a careful man. Boys can never safely be trusted with the deciding, at discretion, whether you shall have a large crop or a small one.

59. But now, something else began to appear as well as turnip-plants; for, all the long grass and weeds having dropped their seeds the summer before, and, probably, for many summers, they now came forth to demand their share of that nourishment, produced by the fermentation, the dews, and particularly the sun, which shines on all alike. I never saw a fiftieth part so many weeds in my life upon a like space of ground. Their little seed leaves, of various hues, formed a perfect mat on the ground. And now it was, that my wide ridges, which had appeared to my neighbours to be so very singular and so unnecessary, were absolutely necessary. First we went with a hoe, and hoed the tops of the ridges, about six inches wide. There were all the plants, then, clear and clean at once, with an expense of about half a day's work to an acre. Then we came, in our Botley fashion, with a single horseplough, took a furrow from the side of one ridge going up the field, a furrow from the other ridge coming down, then another furrow from the same side of the first

ridge going up, and another from the same side of the other ridge coming down. In the taking away of the last two furrows, we went within three inches of the turnip-plants. Thus there was a ridge over the original gutter. Then we turned these furrows back again to the turnips. And, having gone, in this manner, over the whole piece, there it was with not a weed alive in it. All killed by the sun, and the field as clean and as fine as any garden that ever was seen.

60. Those who know the effect of tillage between growing plants, and especially if the earth be moved deep (and, indeed, what American does not know what such effect is, seeing that, without it, there would be no Indian Corn?); those that reflect on this effect, may guess at the effect on my Ruta Baga plants, which soon gave me, by their appearance, a decided proof, that Tull's principles are always true, in whatever soil or

climate applied.

61. It was now a very beautiful thing to see, a regular unbroken line of fine, fresh looking plants upon the tops of those wide ridges, which had been thought to be so very whimsical and unnecessary. But, why have the ridges so very wide? This question was not new to me. who had to answer it a thousand times in England. It is because you cannot plough deep and clean in a narrower space than four feet; and, it is the deep and clean ploughing that I regard as the surest means of a large crop, especially in poor, or indifferent ground. It is a great error to suppose, that there is any ground lost by these wide intervals. My crop of thirty-three tons, or thirteen hundred and twenty bushels, to the acre, taking a whole field together, had the same sort of intervals; while my neighbour's, with two feet intervals, never arrived at two thirds of the weight of that crop. There is no ground lost; for, any one, who has a mind to do it, may satisfy himself, that the lateral roots of any fine large turnip will extend more than six feet from the bulb of the plant. The intervals are full of these roots, the breaking of which and the moving of which, as in the case of Indian Corn, gives new food and new roots, and produces wonderful effects on the plants. Wide as my intervals were, the leaves of some of the plants very nearly touched those of the plants on the adjoining ridge,

before the end of their growth; and I have had them frequently meet in this way in England. They would always do it here, if the ground were rich and the tillage proper. How then, can the intervals be too wide, if the plants occupy the interval? And how can any ground be lost if every inch be full of roots and shaded

by leaves?

62. After the last-mentioned operation my plants remained till the weeds had again made their appearance; or, rather, till a new brood had started up. When this was the case, we went with the hoe again, and cleaned the tops of the ridges as before. The weeds under this all-powerful sun, instantly perish. Then we repeated the former operation with the one-horse plough. After this nothing was done but to pull up now and then a weed, which had escaped the hoe; for, as to the ploughshare, nothing escapes that.

63. Now, I think, no farmer can discover in this process any thing more difficult, more troublesome, more expensive, than in the process absolutely necessary to the obtaining of a crop of Indian Corn. And yet, I will venture to say, that in any land, capable of bearing fifty bushels of corn upon an acre, more than a thousand bushels of Ruta Baga may, in the above described

manner, be raised.

64. In the broad-cast method the after-culture must, of course, be confined to hoeing, or, as Tull calls it, scratching. In England, the hoer goes in when the plants are about four inches high, and hoes all the ground, setting out the plants to about eighteen inches apart; and, if the ground be at all foul, he is obliged to go in about a month afterwards, to hoe the ground again. This is all that is done; and a very poor all it is, as the crops, on the very best ground, compared with the ridged crops, invariably show.

Transplanting.

BAGA; and, in certain cases, far preferable to either of the other two. My large crops at Botley were from roots transplanted. I resorted to this mode in order to insure a crop in spite of the fly; but, I am of opinion,

that it is, in all cases, the best mode, provided hands can be obtained in sufficient number, just for a few days, or weeks, as the quantity may be, when the land and the plants are ready.

66. Much light is thrown on matters of this sort by describing what one has done one's self relating to them. This is practice at once; or, at least, it comes much

nearer to it than any instructions possibly can.

In the summer of 1812, I had a piece of Ruta Baga in the middle of a field, or, rather, the piece occupied a part of the field, having a crop of carrots on one side, and a crop of Mangel Wurzel on the other side. On the 20th of July the turnips, or rather, those of them which had escaped the fly, began to grow pretty well. They had been sown in drills; and I was anxious to fill up the spaces, which had been occasioned by the ravages of the fly. I, therefore, took the supernumerary plants, which I found in the un-attacked places, and filled up the rows by transplantation, which I did also in two other fields.

68. The turnips thus transplanted, grew, and, in fact, were pretty good; but, they were very far inferior to those which had retained their original places. But, it happened, that on one side of the above-mentioned piece of turnips, there was a vacant space of about a yard in breadth. When the ploughman had finished ploughing between the rows of turnips, I made him plough up that spare ground very deep, and upon it I made my gardener go and plant two rows of turnips. These became the largest and finest of the whole piece, though transplanted two days later than those which had been transplanted in the rows throughout the piece. The cause of this remarkable difference, I at once saw, was, that these had been put into newly-ploughed ground; for, though I had not read much of Tull at the time here referred to, I knew, from the experience of my whole life, that plants as well as seeds ought always to go into ground as recently moved as possible; because at every moving of the earth, and particularly at every turning of it, a new process of fermentation takes place, fresh exhalations arise, and a supply of the food of plants is thus prepared for the newly arrived guests. Mr. Curwen, the Member of Parliament, though a poor thing as to public matters, has published not a bad book on agriculture. It is not bad, because it contains many authentic accounts of experiments made by himself; though I never can think of his book without thinking, at the same time, of the gross and scandalous plagiarisms, which he has committed upon Tull. Without mentioning particulars, the "Honourable Member" will, I am sure, know what I mean, if this page should ever have the honour to fall under his eye; and he will, I hope, repent, and give proof of his repentance, by a

restoration of the property to the right owner.

69. However, Mr. Curwen, in his book, gives an account of the wonderful effects of moving the ground between plants in rows; and he tells us of an experiment, which he made, and which proved, that from ground just ploughed, in a very dry time, an exhalation of many tons weight, per acre, took place, during the first twenty-four hours after ploughing, and of a less and less number of tons, during the three or four succeeding twenty-four hours; that, in the course of about a week, the exhalation ceased; and that, during the whole period, the ground, though in the same field, which had not been ploughed when the other ground was, exhaled not an ounce! When I read this in Mr. Curwen's book, which was before I had read Tull, I called to mind, that, having once dug the ground between some rows of part of a plot of cabbages in my garden, in order to plant some late peas, I perceived (it was in a dry time) the cabbages, the next morning, in the part recently dug, with big drops of dew hanging on the edges of the leaves, and in the other, or undug part of the plot, no drops at all. I had forgotten the fact till I read Mr. Cur-WEN, and I never knew the cause till I read the real Father of English Husbandry.

of my English transplanting. I saw, at once, that the only way to ensure a crop of turnips was by transplantation. The next year, therefore, I prepared a field of five acres, and another of twelve. I made ridges, in the manner described, for sowing; and, on the 7th of June

in the first field, and on the 20th of July in the second field, I planted my plants. I ascertained to an exactness, that there were thirty-three tons to an acre, throughout the whole seventeen acres. After this, I never used any other method. I never saw above half as great a crop in any other person's land; and, though we read of much greater in agricultural prize reports, they must have been of the extent of a single acre, or something in that way. In my usual order, the ridges four feet asunder, and the plants a foot asunder on the ridge, there were ten thousand eight kundred and thirty turnips on the acre of ground; and, therefore, for an acre to weigh thirty-three tons, each turnip must weigh very nearly seven pounds. After the time here spoken of, I had an acre or two at the end of a large field, transplanted on the 13th of July, which probably, weighed fifty tons an acre. I delayed to have them weighed till a fire happened in some of my farm buildings, which produced a further delay, and so the thing was not done at all; but, I weighed one wagon load, the turnips of which averaged eleven pounds each; and several weighed fourteen pounds each. My very largest upon Long Island weighed twelve pounds and a half. In all these cases, as well here as in England, the produce was from transplanted plants; though at Hyde Park, I have many turnips of more than ten pounds weight each from sown plants, some of which, on account of the great perfection in their qualities, I have selected, and am now planting out, for seed.

at Hyde Park. In a part of the ground which was put into ridges and sown, I scattered the seed along very thinly upon the top of the ridge. But, however thinly you may attempt to scatter such small seeds, there will always be too many plants, if the tillage be good and the seed good also. I suffered these plants to stand as they came up; and, they stood much too long, on account of my want of hands, or, rather, my want of time to attend to give my directions in the transplanting; and, indeed, my example too; for, I met not with a man who knew how to fix a plant in the ground; and, strange as it may appear, more than half the bulk of crop depends on a

little, triffling, contemptible twist of the setting-stick, or dibble; a thing very well known to all gardeners in the case of cabbages, and about which, therefore, I will give,

by and by, very plain instructions.

72. Thus puzzled, and not being able to spare time to do the job myself, I was one day looking at my poor plants, which were daily suffering for want of removal, and was thinking how glad I should be of one of the Churchers at Botley, who, I thought to myself, would soon clap me out my turnip patch. At this very time, and into the field itself, came a cousin of one of these Churchers, who had lately arrived from England! It was very strange, but literally the fact.

73. To work Churcher and I went, and, with the aid of persons to pull up the plants and bring them to us, we planted out about two acres, in the mornings and evenings of six days: for the weather was too hot for us to keep out after breakfast, until about two hours before sun-set. There was a friend staying with me, who helped us to plant, and who did, indeed, as much of

the work as either Churcher or I.

74. The time when this was done was from the 21st to the 28th of August, one Sunday and one day of no planting, having intervened. Every body knows, that this is the very hottest season of the year; and, as it happened, this was, last summer, the very driest also. The weather had been hot and dry from the 10th of August; and so it continued to the 12th of September. Any gentleman who has kept a journal of last year, upon Long Island, will know this to be correct. Who would have thought to see these plants thrive; who would have thought to see them live? The next day after being planted, their leaves crumbled between our fingers, like the old leaves of trees. In two days there was no more appearance of a crop upon the ground than there was of a crop on the turnpike-road. But, on the 2nd of September, as I have it in my memorandum-book, the plants began to show life; and, before the rain came, on the 12th, the piece began to have an air of verdure, and, indeed, to grow and to promise a good crop.

75. I will speak of the bulk of this crop by and by;

but, I must here mention another transplantation that I made in the latter end of July. A plot of ground, occupied by one of my earliest sowings, had the turnips standing in it in rows at eighteen inches asunder, and at Towards the middle of a foot asunder in the rows. July I found, that one half of the rows must be taken away, or that the whole would be of little value. Having pulled up the plants, I intended to translate them (as they say of Bishops) from the garden to the field; but, I had no ground ready. However, I did not like to throw away these plants, which had already bulbs as large as hens' eggs. They were carried into the cellar, where they lay in a heap, till (which would soon happen in such hot weather) they began to ferment. This made the most of their leaves turn white. Unwilling, still, to throw them away, I next laid them on the grass in the front of the house, where they got the dews in the night, and they were covered with a mat during the day, except two days, when they were overlooked, or, rather, neglected. The heat was very great, and, at last, supposing these plants dead, I did not cover them any more. There they lay abandoned till the 24th of July, on which day I began planting Cabbages in my field. I then thought, that I would try the hardiness of a Ruta Baga plant. I took these same abandoned plants, without a morsel of green left about them; planted them in part of a row of the piece of cabbages; and they, a hundred and six in number, weighed, when they were taken up, in December, nine hundred and one pounds. One of these turnips weighed twelve pounds and a half.

76. But, it ought to be observed, that this was in ground which had been got up in my best manner; that it had some of the best of my manure: and, that uncommon pains were taken by myself in the putting in of the plants. This experiment shows, what a hardy plant this is; but, I must caution the reader against a belief, that it is either desirable or prudent to put this quality to so severe a test. There is no necessity for it, in general; and, indeed, the rule is, that the shorter time the plants are out of the ground the better.

77. But, as to the business of transplanting, there is one very material observation to make. The ground ought to be as fresh; that is to say, as recently moved by the plough, as possible; and that for the reasons before stated. The way I go on is this: my land is put up into ridges, as described under the head of Manner of sowing. This is done before-hand, several days; or, it may be, a week or more. When we have our plants and hands all ready, the ploughman begins, and turns in the ridges; that is to say, ploughs the ground back again, so that the top of the new-ploughed ridge stands over the place where the channel, or gutter, or deep furrow, was, before he began. As soon as he has finished the first ridge, the planters plant it; while he is ploughing the second: and so on throughout the field. That this is not a very tedious process the reader needs only to be told, that, in 1816, I had fifty-two acres of Ruta Baga planted in this way; and I think I had more than fifty thousand bushels. A smart hand will plant half an acre a-day, with a girl or a boy to drop the plants for him. I had a man, who planted an acre a day many a time. But, supposing that a quarter of an acre is a day's work, what are four days' work, when put in competion with the value of an acre of this invaluable root? And what farmer is there, who has common industry, who would grudge to bend his own back eight or twelve days, for the sake of keeping all his stock through the Spring months, when dry food is loathsome to them, and when grass is by nature denied?

78. Observing well what has been said about earth perfectly fresh, and never forgetting this, let us now talk about the act of planting; the mere mechanical operation of putting the plant into the ground. We have a setting-stick which should be the top of a spade-handle cut off, about ten inches below the eye. It must be pointed smoothly; and, if it be shod with thin iron; that is to say, covered with an iron sheath, it will work more smoothly, and do its business the better. At any rate the point should be nicely smoothed, and so should the whole of the tool. The planting is performed like that of cabbage-plants; but, as I have met with very few persons, out of the market gardens, and gentlemen's

gardens in England, who knew how to plant a cabbage-plant, so I am led to suppose, that very few, comparatively speaking, know how to plant a turnip-plant.

79. You constantly hear people say, that they wait for a shower, in order to put out their cabbage-plants. Never was there an error more general or more complete in all its parts. Instead of rainy weather being the best time, it is the very worst time, for this business of transplantation, whether of cabbages or of any thing else, from a lettuce-plant to an apple-tree. I have proved the fact, in scores upon scores of instances. The first time that I had any experience of the matter was in the planting out of a plot of cabbages in my garden at Wilmington in Delaware. I planted in dry weather, and, as I had always done, in such cases, I watered the plants heavily; but, being called away for some purpose, I left one row unwatered, and it happened, that it so continued without my observing it till the next day. The sun had so completely scorched it by the next night, that when I repeated my watering of the rest, I left it, as being unworthy of my care, intending to plant some other thing in the ground occupied by this dead row. But, in a few days, I saw, that it was not dead. It grew soon afterwards; and, in the end, the cabbages of my dead row were not only larger, but earlier in loaving, than any of the rest of the plot.

80. The reason is this: if plants are put into wet earth, the setting-stick squeezes the earth up against the tender fibres in a mortar-like state. The sun comes and bakes this mortar into a sort of glazed clod. The hole made by the stick is also a smooth sided hole, which retains its form, and presents, on every side, an impenetrable substance to the fibres. In short, such as the hole is made, such it, in a great measure, remains, and the roots are cooped up in this sort of well, instead of having a free course left them to seek their food on every side. Besides this, the fibres get, from being wet when planted, into a small compass. They all cling about the tap-root, and are stuck on to it by the wet dirt; in which state, if a hot sun follow, they are all baked together in a lump, and cannot stir. On the contrary, when put into ground unwet, the reverse of all this takes place; and the fresh earth will, under any

sun, supply moisture in quantity sufficient.

81. Yet in July and August, both in England and America, how many thousands and thousands are waiting for a shower to put out their plants! And then, when the long-wished-for shower comes, they must plant upon stale ground, for they have it dug ready, as it were, for the purpose of keeping them company in waiting for the shower. Thus all the fermentations which took place upon the digging, is gone; and, when the planting has once taken place, farewell to the spade! For, it appears to be a privilege of the Indian corn to receive something like good usage after being planted. It is very strange that it should have been thus, for what reason is there for other plants not enjoying a similar benefit? The reason is, that they will produce something without it; and the Indian corn will positively produce nothing; for which the Indian corn is very much to be commended. As an instance of this effect of deeply moving the earth between growing crops, I will mention, that, in the month of June, and on the 26th of that month, a very kind neighbour of mine, in whose garden I was, showed me a plot of Green Savoy Cabbages, which he had planted in some ground as rich as ground could be. He had planted them about three weeks before; and they appeared very fine indeed. In the seed bed, from which he had taken his plants, there remained about a hundred: but. as they had been left as of no use, they had drawn each other up, in company with the weeds, till they were about eighteen inches high, having only a starved leaf or two upon the top of each. I asked my neighbour to give me these plants, which he readily did; but begged me not to plant them, for, he assured me, that they would come to nothing. Indeed, they were a ragged lot; but, I had no plants of my own sowing more than two inches high. I, therefore, took these plants and dug some ground for them between some rows of scarlet blossomed beans, which mount upon poles. I cut a stick on purpose, and put the plants very deep into the ground. My beans came off in August, and then the ground was well dug between the rows of cabbages.

In September, mine had far surpassed the prime plants of my neighbour. And, in the end I believe, that ten of my cabbages would have weighed a hundred of his, leaving out the stems in both cases. But, his had remained uncultivated after planting. The ground, battered down by successive rains, had become hard as a brick. All the stores of food had been locked up, and lay in a dormant state. There had been no renewed fermentations, and no exhalations.

82. Having now said what, I would fain hope, will convince every reader of the folly of waiting for a shower in order to transplant plants of any sort, I will now speak of the mere act of planting, more particu-

larly than I have hitherto spoken.

83. The hole is made sufficiently deep; deeper than the length of the root does really require; but, the root should not be bent at the point, if it can be avoided. Then, while one hand holds the plant, with its root in the hole, the other hand applies the setting-stick to the earth on one side of the hole, the stick being held in such a way as to form a sharp triangle with the plant. Then pushing the stick down, so that its point goes a little deeper than the point of the root, and giving it a little twist, it presses the earth against the point, or bottom of the root. And thus all is safe, and the plant is sure to grow.

84. The general, and almost universal fault, is, that the planter, when he has put the root into the hole, draws the earth up against the upper part of the root or stem, and, if he presses pretty well there, he thinks that the planting is well done. But, it is the point of the root, against which the earth ought to be pressed, for there the fibres are; and, if they do not touch the earth closely, the plant will not thrive. The reasons have been given in paragraphs 51 and 52, in speaking of the sowing of seeds. It is the same in all cases of transplanting or planting. Trees, for instance, will be sure to grow, if you sift the earth, or pulverise it very finely, and place it carefully and closely about the roots. When we plant a tree, we see all eovered by tumbling in the earth; and, it appears whimsical to suppose, that the earth does not touch all the roots.

But, the fact is, that unless great pains be taken, there will be many cavities in the hole where the tree is planted; and, in whatever places the earth does not closely touch the root, the root will mould, become cankered, and will lead to the producing of a poor tree.

85. When I began transplanting in fields in England, I had infinite difficulty in making my planters attend to the directions, which I have here given. " The point of the stick to the point of the root!" was my constant cry. As I could not be much with my workpeople, I used, in order to try whether they had planted properly, to go after them, and now-and-then take the tip of a leaf between my finger and thumb. If the plant resisted the pull, so as for the bit of leaf to come away, I was sure that the plant was well fixed; but, if the pull brought up the plant out of the ground; then I was sure, that the planting was not well done. After the first field or two, I had no trouble. My work was as well done, as if the whole had been done by myself. My planting was done chiefly by young women, each of whom would plant half an acre a day, and their pay was ten-pence sterling a day. What a shame, then, for any man to shrink at the trouble and labour of such a matter! Nor, let it be imagined, that these young women were poor, miserable, ragged, squalid creatures. They were just the contrary. On a Sunday they appeared in their white dresses, and with silk umbrellas over their heads. Their constant labour afforded the means of dressing well, their early rising and exercise gave them health, their habitual cleanliness and neatness, for which the women of the South of England are so justly famed, served to aid in the completing of their appearance, which was that of fine rosy-cheeked country-girls, fit to be the helpmates, and not the burdens, of their future husbands.

86. But, at any rate, what can be said for a man that thinks too much of such a piece of labour? The earth is always grateful; but it must and will have something to be grateful for. As far as my little experience has enabled me to speak, I find no want of willingness to learn in any of the American workmen. Ours, in England, are apt to be very obstinate, especially if get-

ing a little old. They do not like to be taught any hing. They say, and they think, that what their fathers lid was best. To tell them, that it was your affair, and not theirs, is nothing. To tell them, that the loss, if any, will fall upon you, and not upon them, has very ittle weight. They argue, that, they being the real loers, ought to be the best judges of the mode of doing. and, indeed, in most cases, they are, and go about this work with wonderful skill and judgment. But, then, it s so difficult to induce them cordially to do any thing new, or any old thing in a new way; and the abler they are as workmen, the more untractable they are, and the nore difficult to be persuaded that any one knows any hing, relating to farming affairs, better than they do. It was this difficulty that made me resort to the employnent of young women in the most important part of my arming, the providing of immense quantities of cattleood. But I do not find this difficulty here, where no workmen are obstinate, and where, too, all one's neighours rejoice at one's success, which is by no means the ease amongst the farmers in England.

87. Having now given instructions relative to the ousiness of transplanting of the Ruta Baga, let us see, whether it be not preferable to either the ridge-sowing

nethod, or the broad-cast method.

88. In the first place, when the seed is sown on the ground where the plants are to come to perfection, the round, as we have seen in paragraph 40 and pararaph 47, must be prepared early in June, at the atest; but, in the transplanting method, this work may be put off, if need be, till early in August, as we have een in paragraphs 74 and 75. However, the best time or transplanting is about the 26th of July, and this gives a month for preparation of land, more than is allowed in the sowing methods. This, of itself, is a creat matter; but, there are others of far greater importance.

89. This transplanted crop may follow another crop on the same land. Early cabbages will loave and be way; early peas will be ripe and off; nay, even wheat, and all grain, except buck-wheat, may be succeeded y Ruta Baga transplanted. I had crops to succeed Potatoes, Kidney Beans, White Peas, Onions, and even Indian Corn, gathered to eat green; and the reader will please to bear in mind, that I did not sow, or plant, any of my first crops, just mentioned, till the month of June. What might a man do, then, who is in a state to begin with his first crops as soon as he pleases? Who has his land all in order, and his ma-

nure ready to be applied.

90. Another great advantage of the transplanting method is, that it saves almost the whole of the after-culture. There is no hoeing; no thinning of the plants; and not more than one ploughing between the ridges. This is a great consideration, and should always be thought of, when we are talking of the trouble of transplanting. The turnips which I have mentioned in paragraphs 72, and 73 had no after-culture of any sort; for they soon spread the ground over with their leaves; and, indeed, after July, very few weeds made their appearance. The season for there coming up is passed; and, as every farmer well knows, if there be no weeds up at the end of July, very few will come that summer.

91. Another advantage of the transplanting method is, that you are sure that you have your right number of plants, and those regularly placed. For in spite of all you can do in sowing, there will be deficiencies and irregularities. The seed may not come up, in some places. The plants may, in some places, be destroyed in their infant state. They may, now and then, be cut off with the hoe. The best plants may sometimes be cut up, and the inferior plants left to grow. And, in the broad-cast method, the irregularity and uncertainty must be obvious to every one. None of these injurious consequences can arise in the transplanting method. Here, when the work is once well done, the crop is certain, and all cares are at an end.

92. In taking my leave of this part of my treatise, I must observe, that it is useless, and, indeed, unjust, for any man to expect success, unless he attend to the thing himself, at least, till he has made the matter perfectly familiar to his work-people. To neglect any part of the business is, in fact, to neglect the whole; just as much as neglecting to put up one of the sides of a build-

ing, is to neglect the whole building. Were it a matter of trifling moment, personal attention might be dispensed with; but, as I shall, I think, clearly show, this is a matter of very great moment to every farmer. The object is, not merely to get roots, but to get them of a large size; for, as I shall show, there is an amazing difference in this. And, large roots are not to be gotten without care, which, by the by, costs nothing. Besides, the care bestowed in obtaining this crop, removes all the million of cares and vexations of the Spring months, when bleatings everlasting din the farmer almost out of his senses, and make him ready to knock the brains out of the clamourous flock, when he ought to feel pleasure in the filling of their bellies.

93. Having now done with the different modes of cropping the ground with Ruta Baga, I will, as I proposed in paragraph 49, speak about the preparation of the land generally; and in doing this, I shall suppose the land to have borne a good crop of wheat the preceding year, and, of course, to be in good heart, as we

call it in England.

94. I would plough this ground in the fall into ridges four feet asunder. The ploughing should be very deep, and the ridges well laid up. In this situation it would, by the successive frosts and thaws, be shaken and broken fine as powder by March or April. In April, it should be turned back; always ploughing deep. A crop of weeds would be well set upon it by the first of June, when they should be smothered by another turning back. Then, about the third week in June, I would carry in my manure, and fling it along on the trenches or furrows. After this I would follow the turning back for the sowing, as is directed in paragraph 50. Now, here are four ploughings. And what is the cost of these ploughings? My man, a black man, a native of this Island, ploughs, with his pair of oxen and no driver, an acre and a half a day, and his oxen keep their flesh extremely well upon the refuse of the Ruta Baga which I send to market. What is the cost then? And, what a fine state the grass is thus brought into! A very different thing indeed is it to plough hard ground, from what it is to plough ground in this fine,

broken state. Besides, every previous ploughing, especially deep ploughing, is equal to a seventh part of

an ordinary coat of manure.

95. In the broad-cast method I would give the same number of previous ploughings, and at the same seasons of the year. I would spread the manure over the ground just before I ploughed it for sowing. Then, when I ploughed for the sowing, I would, if I had only one pair of oxen, plough about half an acre, harrow the ground, sow it immediately, and roll it with a light roller, which a little horse might draw, in order to press the earth about the seeds, and cover them too. There need be no harrowing after sowing. We never do it in England. The roller does all very completely, and the sowing upon the fresh earth will, under any sun, furnish the moisture sufficient. I once sowed, on ridges, with a Bennett's drill, and neither harrowed nor rolled nor used any means at all of covering the seeds; and yet I had plenty of plants and a very fine crop of turnips. I sowed a piece of white turnips, broad-cast, at Hyde Park, last summer, on the eleventh of August, which did very well, though neither harrowed nor rolled after being sown. But, in both these cases, there came rain directly after the sowing, which battered down the seeds; and which rain, indeed, it was, which prevented the rolling; for, that cannot take place when the ground is wet; because, then, the earth will adhere to the roller, which will go on growing in size like a rolling snow-ball. To harrow after the sowing is sure to do mischief. We always bury seeds too deep; and, in the operation of harrowing, more than half the seeds of turnips must be destroyed, or rendered useless. a seed lies beyond the proper depth, it will either remain in a quiescent state, until some movement of the earth bring it up to the distance from the surface, which will make it vegetate, or, it will vegetate, and come up later than the rest of the plants. It will be feebler also; and it will never be equal to a plant, which has come from a seed near the surface.

96. Before I proceed further, it may not be amiss to say something more respecting the burying of seed, though it may here be rather out of place. Seeds bu-

ried below their proper depth, do not come up; but, many of them are near enough to the surface, sometimes, to vegetate, without coming up; and then they die. This is the case, in many instances, with more than one half of the seed that is sown. But, if seeds be buried so deep, that they do not even vegetate, then they do not die; and this is one cause, though not the only cause, of our wondering to see weeds come up, . where we are sure that no seeds have fallen for many years. At every digging, or every ploughing, more or less of the seeds, that have formerly been buried, come up near the surface; and then they vegetate. I have seen many instances in proof of this fact; but, the particular instance on which I found the positiveness of my assertion, was in Parsnip seed. It is a very delicate seed. It will, if beat out, keep only one year. I had a row of fine seed parsnips in my garden, many of the seeds of which fell in the gathering. The ground was dug, in the fall; and, when I saw it full of parsnips in the Spring, I only regarded this as a proof, that parsnips might be sown in the fall, though I have since proved, that it is a very bad practice. The ground was dug again, and again for several successive years; and there was always a crop of parsnips, without a grain of seed ever having been sown on it. But lest any one should take it into his head, that this is a most delightful way of saving the trouble of sowing, I ought to state, that the parsnips coming thus at random, gave me a great deal more labour, than the same crop would have given me in the regular way of sowing. Besides, the fall is not the time to sow, as my big and white parsnips, now selling in New York market, may clearly show; seeing that they were sown in June! And yet, people are flocking to the Western Countries in search of rich land, while thousands of acres of such land as I occupy are lying waste in Long Island, within three hours' drive of the all-consuming and incessantly increasing city of New York!

97. I have now spoken of the preparation of the land for the reception of seeds. As to the preparation in the case of transplantation, it might be just the same as for the sowing on ridges. But here might, in this

case, be one more previous ploughing, always taking care to plough in dry weather, which is an observation

I ought to have made before.

98. But, why should not the plants, in this case, succeed some other good crop, as mentioned before? I sowed some early peas (brought from England) on the 2nd of June. I harvested them, quite ripe and hard, on the 31st of July; and I had very fine Ruta Baga, some weighing six pounds each, after the peas. How little is known of the powers of this soil and climate! My potatoes were of the kidney sort, which, as every one knows, is not an early sort. They were planted on the 2nd of June; and they were succeeded by a most abundant crop of Ruta Baga. And, the manure for the peas and potatoes served for the Ruta Baga also. In surveying my crops and feeling grateful to the kind earth and the glorious sun that produce these, to me, most delightful objects, how often have I turned, with an aching heart, towards the ill-treated Englishmen, shut up in dungeons by remorseless tyrants, while not a word had been uttered in their defence by, and while they were receiving not one cheering visit, or comforting word from, SIR FRANCIS BURDETT, who had been the great immediate cause of their incarceration!

99. As to the quantity and sort of manure to be used in general, it may be the same as for a sowing of rye, or of wheat. I should perfer ashes; but, my large crops in England were on yard-dung, first thrown into a heap, and afterwards turned once or twice, in the usual manner as practised in England. At Hyde Park I had nothing but rakings up about the yard, barn, &c. as described before. What I should do, and what I shall do this year, is, to make ashes out of dirt, or earth, of any sort, not very stony. Nothing is so easy as this, especially in this fine climate. I see people go with their wagons five miles for soaper's ashes; that is to say, spent ashes, which they purchase at the landing place (for they come to the island in vessels) at the rate of about five dollars for forty bushels. Add the expense of land-carriage, and the forty bushels do not cost less than ten dollars. I am of opinion, that, by the burning

of earth, as much manure may be got up on the land for half a dollar. I made an experiment last summer, which convinces me, that, if the spent ashes be received as a gift at three miles' distance of land-carriage, they are not a gift worth accepting. But, this experiment was upon a small scale; and, therefore, I will not now

speak positively on the subject.

100. I am now preparing to make a perfect trial of these ashes. I have just ploughed up a piece of ground, in which, a few years ago, Indian Corn was planted, and produced, as I am assured, only stalks, and those not more than two feet high. The ground has, every year since, borne a crop of weeds, rough grass, and briars, or brambles. The piece is about ten acres. I intend to have Indian corn on it; and, my manure shall be made on the spot, and consist of nothing but burnt earth. If I have a decent crop of Indian corn on this land so manured, it will, I think, puzzle my good neighbours to give a good reason for their going

five miles for spent ashes.

101. Whether I succeed, or not, I will give an account of my experiment. This I know, that I, in the year 1815, burnt ashes, in one heap, to the amount of about two hundred English cart-loads, each load holding about forty bushels. I should not suppose, that the burning cost me more than five dollars; and there they were upon the spot, in the very field, where they were used. As to their effect, I used them for the transplanted Ruta Baga and Mangel Wurzel, and they produced full as great an effect as the yard-dung used on the same land. This process of burning earth into ashes, without suffering the smoke to escape, during any part of the process, is a discovery of Irish origin. It was pointed out to me by Mr. WILLIAM GAUNTLETT of Winchester, late a Commissary with the army in Spain. To this gentleman I also owe, England owes, and I hope America will owe, the best sort of hogs, that are, I believe, in the world. I was wholly unacquainted with Mr. GAUNTLETT, till the summer of 1815, when, happening to pass by my farm, he saw my hogs, cows, &c. and, when he came by my house he called, and told me, that he had observed, that I wanted only a

good sort of hogs, to make my stock complete, I thought, that I already had the finest in England; and I certainly had a very fine breed, the father of which, with legs not more than about six inches long, weighed, when he was killed, twenty-seven score, according to our Hampshire mode of stating hog-meat weight; or, five hundred and forty pounds. This breed has been fashioned by Mr. Woods of Woodmancut in Sussex, who has been, I believe, more than twenty years about it. I thought it perfection itself; but, I was obliged to confess, that Mr. Gauntlett's surpassed it.

102. Of the earth burning I will give an account in my next Part of this work. Nothing is easier of performance; and the materials are every where to be

found.

103. I think, that I have now pretty clearly given an account of the modes of sowing, and planting, and cultivating the Ruta Baga, and of the preparation of the land. It remains for me to speak of the time and manner of harvesting, the quantity of the crop, and of the uses of, and the mode of applying the crop.

Time and Manner of Harvesting.

104. This must depend, in some measure, upon the age of the turnip; for, some will have their full growth earlier than others; that is to say, those, which are sown first, or transplanted first, will be ripe before those which are sown, or transplanted latest. I have made ample experiments as to this matter; and I will, as in former cases, first relate what I did; and then

give my opinion as to what ought to be done.

105. This was a concern in which I could have no knowledge last fall, never having seen any turnips harvested in America, and knowing, that, as to American frosts, English experience was only likely to mislead; for, in England, we leave the roots standing in the ground all the winter, where we feed them off with sheep, which scoop them out to the very bottom; or we pull them as we want them, and bring them in to give to fatting oxen, to cows, or hogs. I had a great opinion of the hardiness of the Ruta Baga, and was

resolved to try it here, and I did try it upon too large

a scale.

paragraph 46; a part of them were taken up on the 13th of December, after we had had some pretty hard frosts. The manner of doing the work was this. We took up the turnips merely by pulling them. The greens had been cut off and given to cattle before. It required a spade, however, just to loosen them along the ridges, into which their tap-roots had descended very deeply. We dug holes at convenient distances, of a square form, and about a foot deep. We put into each hole about fifty bushels of turnips, piling them up above the level of the surface of the land, in a sort of pyramidical form. When the heap was made, we scattered over it about a truss of rye-straw, and threw earth over the whole to a thickness of about a foot, taking care to point the co-

vering at top, in order to keep out wet.

107. Thus was a small part of the piece put up. The 14th of December was a Sunday, a day that I can find no Gospel precept for devoting to the throwing away of the fruit of one's labours, and a day which I never will so devote again. However, I ought to have been earlier. On the Monday it rained. On the Monday night came a sharp North-Wester with its usual companion, at this season; that is to say, a sharp frost. Resolved to finish this piece on that day, I borrowed hands from my neighbours, who are always ready to assist one another. We had about two acres and a half to do; and it was necessary to employ about one half of the hands to go before the pullers and loosen the turnips with a spade in the frosty ground. About ten o'clock, I saw, that we should not finish, and there was every appearance of a hard frost at night. In order, therefore, to expedite the work, I called in the aid of those efficient fellow-labourers, a pair of oxen, which, with a good strong plough, going up one side of each row of turnips, took a way the earth close to the bulbs, left them bare on one side, and thus made it extremely easy to pull them up. We wanted spades no longer; all our hands were employed taking up the turnips; and our job, instead of being half done that

day, was completed by about two o'clock. Well and justly did Moses order, that the ox should not be muzzled while he was treading out the corn; for, surely, no animals are so useful, so docile, so gentle as these, while they require at our hands so little care and labour in return!

108. Now, it will be observed, that the turnips here spoken of, were put up when the ground and the turnips were frozen. Yet they have kept perfectly sound and good; and I am preparing to plant some of them for seed. I am now writing on the 10th of April. I send off these turnips to market every week. The tops and tails and offal I give to the pigs, to the ewes and lambs, and to a cow, and to working oxen, which all feed together upon this offal flung out about the barnyard, or on the grass ground in the orchard. Before they have done, they leave not a morsel. But, of feeding I shall speak by and by.

109. The other crop of turnips, I mean those which were transplanted, as mentioned in paragraphs 72 and 73, and which, owing to their being planted so late in the summer, kept on *growing* most luxuriantly till the

very hard frosts came.

110. We were now got on to the 17th of December; and I had cabbages to put up. Saturday, Sunday, and Monday, the 21st and 22nd and 23rd, we had a very hard frost, as the reader, if he live on this island, will well remember. There came a thaw afterwards, and the transplanted turnips were put up like the others; but this hard frost had pierced them too deeply, especially as they were in so tender and luxuriant a state. Many of these we find rotted near the neck; and, upon the whole, they have suffered a loss of about one half. An acre, left to take their chance in the field, turned out, like most of the games of hazard, a total loss. They were all rotted.

111. This loss arose wholly from my want of sufficient experience. I was anxious to neglect no necessary precaution; and I was fully impressed, as I always am, with the advantages of being early. But, early in December, I lost a week at New York; and, though I worried my neighbours half to death to get at a know-

ledge of the time of the hard weather setting in, I could obtain no knowledge, on which I could rely, the several accounts being so different from each other. The general account was, that there would be no very hard weather till after Christmas. I shall know better another time! Major Cartwright says, in speaking of the tricks of English Boroughmongers, at the "Glorious Revolution," that they will never be able to play the same tricks again; for that nations, like rational individuals, are not deceived twice in the same way.

112. Thus have I spoken of the time and manner of harvesting, as they took place with me. And, surely, the expense is a mere trifle. Two oxen and four men would harvest two acres in any clear day in the latter end of November; and thus is this immense crop harvested, and covered completely, for about two dollars and a half an acre. It is astonishing, that this is never done in England! For, though it is generally said, that the Ruta Baga will stand any weather; I know, by experience, that it will not stand any weather. The winter of the year 1814, that is to say, the months of January and February, were very cold, and a great deal of snow fell; and, in a piece of twelve acres, I had, in the month of March, two thirds of the turnips completely rotten; and these were amongst the finest that I ever grew, many of them weighing twelve pounds each. Besides, when taken up in dry weather, before the freezings and thawings begin, the dirt all falls off; and the bulbs are clean and nice to be given to cattle or sheep in the stalls or yards. For, though we in general feed off these roots upon the land with sheep, we cannot, in deep land, always do it. The land is too wet; and particularly for ewes and lambs, which are, in such cases, brought into a piece of pasture land, or into a fold-yard, where the turnips are flung down to them in a dirty state, just carted from the field. And, again, the land is very much injured, and the labour augmented, by carting when the ground is a sort of mud-heap, or rather, pool. All these inconveniences and injuries would be avoided by harvesting in a dry day in November, if such a day should, by an accident, be found in England; but, why not do the work in October, and sow wheat, at once, in the land? More

on this after-cropping, another time.

113. In Long Island, and throughout the United States, where the weather is so fine in the fall; where every day, from the middle of October to the end of November (except a rainy day about once in 16 days), is as fair as the fairest May-day in England, and where such a thing as a water-furrow in a field was never heard of; in such a soil as this, and under such a clima e as this, there never can arise any difficulty in the way of the harvesting of turnips in proper time. should certainly do it in November; for, as we have seen, a little frost does not affect the bulbs at all. would put them in when perfectly dry; make my heaps of about fifty bushels; and, when the frosts approached, I mean the hard frosts, I would cover with corn-stalks, or straw, or cedar boughs, as many of the heaps as I thought I should want in January and February; for, these coverings would so break the frost, as to enable me to open the heaps in those severe months. It is useless and inconvenient to take into barns, or outhouses, a very large quantity at a time. Besides, if left uncovered, the very hard frosts will do them harm. To be sure, this is easily prevented, in the barn, by throwing a little straw over the heap; but, being, by the means that I have pointed out, always kept ready in the field, to bring in a larger quantity than is used in a week, or thereabouts, would be wholly unnecessary, besides being troublesome from the great space, which would thus be occupied.

114. It is a great advantage in the cultivation of this crop, that the sowing, or transplanting time, comes after all the spring grain and the Indian Corn are safe in the ground, and before the harvest of grain begins; and then again, in the fall, the taking up of the roots comes after the grain and corn, and buck-wheat harvests, and even after the sowing of the winter grain. In short, it seems to me, that the cultivation of this crop, in this country, comes, as it were expressly, to fill up the unemployed spaces of the farmer's time; but, if he prefer standing with arms folded, during these spaces of time, and hearing his flock bleat themselves half

to death in March and April, or have no flock, and scarcely any cattle or hogs, raise a few loads of yard-dung, and travel five miles for ashes, and buy them dear at the end of the five miles; if he *prefer* these, then, certainly, I shall have written on this subject in vain.

Quantity of the Crop.

115. It is impossible for me to say, at present, what quantity of Ruta Baga may be grown on an acre of land in this Island. My three acres of ridged turnips, sown on the 26th of June, were very unequal, but, upon one of the acres, there were six hundred and forty bushels; I mean heaped bushels; that is to say, an English statute bushel heaped as long as the commodity will lie on. The transplanted turnips yielded about four hundred bushels to the acre; but then, observe, they were put in a full month too late. This year, I shall make a fair trial.

116. I have given an account of my raising, upon five acres in one field, and twelve acres in another field, one thousand three hundred and twenty bushels to an acre, throughout the seventeen acres. I have no doubt of equalling that quantity on this Island, and that, too, upon some of its poorest and most exhausted land. They tell me, indeed, that the last summer was a remarkably fine summer; so they said at Botley, when I had my first prodigious crop of Ruta Baga. This is the case in all the pursuits of life. The moment a man excels those, who ought to be able and willing to do as well as he; that moment, others set to work to discover causes for his success, other than those proceeding from himself. But, as I used to tell my neighbours at Botley, they have had the same seasons that I have had. Nothing is so impartial as weather. As long as this sort of observation, or inquiry, proceeds from a spirit of emulation, it may be treated with great indulgence; but, when it discovers a spirit of envy, it becomes detestable, and especially in affairs of agriculture, where the appeal is made to our common Parent, and where no man's success can be injurious to his neighbour, while it must be a benefit to his country,

or the country in which the success takes place. must, however, say, and I say it with feelings of great pleasure, as well as from a sense of justice, that I have observed in the American farmers no envy of the kind alluded to; but, on the country, the greatest satisfaction, at my success; and not the least backwardness, but great forwardness, to applaud and admire my mode of cultivating these crops. Not so, in England, where the farmers (generally the most stupid as well as most slavish and most churlish part of the nation) envy all who excel them, while they are too obstinate to profit from the example of those whom they envy. I say generally; for there are many most honourable exceptions; and, it is amongst that class of men that I have my dearest and most esteemed friends; men of knowledge, of experience, of integrity, and of public-spirit, equal to that of the best of Englishmen in the worst times of oppression. I would not exchange the friendship of one of these men for that of all the Lords that ever were created, though there are some of them very able and upright men, too.

117. Then, if I may be suffered to digress a little further here, there exists, in England, an institution, which has caused a sort of identity of agriculture with The Board of Agriculture, established by Pitt for the purpose of sending spies about the country, under the guise of Agricultural surveyors, in order to learn the cast of men's politics as well as the taxable capacities of their farms and property; this Board gives no premium or praise to any but "loyal farmers," who are generally the greatest fools. I, for my part, have never had any communication with it. It was always an object of ridicule and contempt with me; but, I know this to be the rule of that body, which is, in fact, only a little twig of the vast tree of corruption, which stunts, and blights, and blasts, all that approaches its poisoned purlieu. This Board has for its Secretary, Mr. ARTHUR YOUNG, a man of great talents, bribed from his good principles by this place of five hundred pounds a year. But Mr. Young, though a most able man, is not always to be trusted. He is a bold asserter; and very few of his statements proceed

upon actual experiments. And, as to what this Board has published, at the public expense, under the name of Communications, I defy the world to match it as a mass of illiterate, unintelligible, useless trash. The only paper, published by this Board, that I ever thought worth keeping, was an account of the produce from a single cow, communicated by Mr. Cramp, the jail-keeper of the County of Sussex; which contained very interesting and wonderful facts, properly authenticated, and stated in a clear manner.

118. ARTHUR Young is blind, and never attends the Board. Indeed, sorrowful to relate, he is become a religious fanatic, and this in so desperate a degree as to leave no hope of any possible cure. In the pride of our health and strength, of mind as well as of body, we little dream of the chances and changes of old age. Who can read the "Travels in France, Spain, and Italy," and reflect on the present state of the admirable writer's mind, without feeling some diffidence as to

what may happen to himself!

of the Board, is a man, not exceeding my negro, either in experience or natural abilities. A parcel of court-sycophants are the Vice-Presidents. Their committees and correspondents are a set of justices of the peace, nabobs become country-gentlemen, and parsons of the worst description. And thus is this a mere political job; a channel for the squandering of some thousands a year of the people's money upon worthless men, who ought to be working in the fields, or mending "His

Majesty's Highways."

120. Happily, politics, in this country, have nothing to do with agriculture; and here, therefore, I think I have a chance to be fairly heard. I should, indeed, have been heard in England; but, I really could never bring myself to do any thing tending to improve the estates of the oppressors of my country; and the same consideration now restrains me from communicating information, on the subject of timber trees, which would be of immense benefit to England; and which information I shall reserve, till the tyranny shall be at an end. Castlereagh, in the fullness of his stupidity, pro-

posed, that, in order to find employment for "the population," as he insolently called the people of England, he would set them to dig holes one day and fill them up the next. I could tell him what to plant in the holes, so as to benefit the country in an immense degree; but, like the human body in some complaints, the nation would now be really injured by the communications of what, if it were in a healthy state, would do it good, add to its strength, and to all its means of exertion.

121. To return from this digression, I am afraid of no bad seasons. The drought, which is the great enemy to be dreaded in this country, I am quite prepared for. Give me ground that I can plough ten or twelve inches deep, and give me Indian corn spaces to plough in, and no sun can burn me up. I have mentioned Mr. Curwen's experiment before; or, rather Tull's; for he it is, who made all the discoveries of this kind. Let any man, just to try, leave half a rod of ground undug from the month of May to that of October; and another half rod let him dig and break fine every ten or fifteen days. Then, whenever there has been fifteen days of good scorching sun, let him go and dig a hole in each. If he does not find the hard ground dry as dust, and the other moist; then let him say, that I know nothing about these matters. So erroneous is the common notion, that ploughing in dry weather lets in the drought!

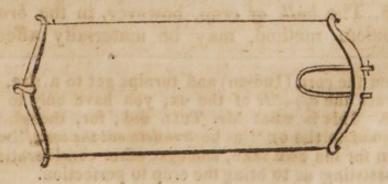
122. Of course, proceeding upon this fact, which I state as the result of numerous experiments, I should, if visited with long droughts, give one or two additional ploughings between the crops when growing. That is all; and, with this, in Long Island, I defy all droughts.

123. But, why need I insist upon this effect of ploughing in dry weather? Why need I insist on it in an Indian corn country? Who has not seen fields of Indian corn looking, to-day, yellow and sickly, and, in four days hence (the weather being dry all the while), looking green and flourishing; and this wonderful effect produced merely by the plough? Why, then, should not the same effect always proceed from the same cause? The deeper you plough, the greater the effect, however; for there is a greater body of earth to exhale from, and to receive back the tribute of the atmosphere. Mr. Curwen tells us of a piece of cattle-cabbages. In

a very dry time in July, they looked so yellow and blue, that he almost despaired of them. He sent in his ploughs; and a gentleman, who had seen them when the ploughs went in on the Monday, could scarcely believe his eyes when he saw them on the next Saturday, though it had continued dry all the week.

124. To perform these summer ploughings, in this island, is really nothing. The earth is so light and in such fine order, and so easily displaced and replaced. I used one horse for the purpose, last summer, and a very slight horse indeed. An ox is, however, better for this work; and this may be accomplished by the use of a collar and two traces, or by a single yoke and two traces. Tull recommends the latter; and I shall try it for Indian corn as well as for turnips.* Horses,

^{*} Since the above paragraph was written, I have made a single-ox-yoke: and, I find it answer excellently well. Now, my work is much shortened; for, in forming ridges, two oxen are awkward. They occupy a wide space, and one of them is obliged to walk upon the ploughed land, which, besides making the ridge uneven at top, presses the ground, which is injurious. For ploughing between the rows of turnips and Indian corn also, what a great convenience this will be! An ox goes steadier than a horse, and will plough deeper, without fretting and without tearing; and he wants neither harness-maker nor groom. The plan of my yoke I took from Tull. I showed it to my workman, who chopped off the limb of a tree, and made the yoke in an hour. It is a piece of wood, with two holes to receive two ropes, about three quarters of an inch in diameter. These traces are fastened into the yoke merely by a knot, which prevents the ends from passing though the holes, while the other ends are fastened to the two ends of a Wiffle-tree, as it is called in Long Island, of a Wipple-tree as it is called in Kent, and of a Wippance, as it is called in Hampshire. I am but a poor draftsman; but, if the printer can find any thing to make the representation with, the following draft will clearly show what I have meant to describe in words-



if they are strong enough, are not so steady as oxen, which are more patient also, and with which you may send the plough-share down without any of the fretting and unequal pulling, or jerking, that you have to encounter with horses. And, as to the slow pace of the ox, it is the old story of the tortoise and the hare. If I had known, in England, of the use of oxen, what I have been taught upon Long Island, I might have saved myself some hundreds of pounds a year. I ought to have followed Tull in this as in all other parts of his manner of cultivating land. But, in our country, it is difficult to get a ploughman to look at an ox. In this Island the thing is done so completely and so eatsily, that it was, to me, quite wonderful to behold. To see one of these Long-Islanders going into the field, or orchard, at sun-rise, with his yoke in his hand, call his oxen by name to come and put their necks under the voke, drive them before him to the plough, just hitch a hook on to the ring of the yoke, and then, without anything except a single chain and the yoke, with no reins, no halter, no traces, no bridle, no driver, set to plough, and plough a good acre and a half in the day. To see this would make an English farmer stare; and well it might, when he looked back to the ceremonious and expensive business of keeping and managing a plough-team in England.

I shall, use, to protect my crops against the effects of a dry season. So that, as every one has the same means at his command, no one need to be afraid of drought. It is a bright plough-share that is always wanted much more than the showers. With this culture there is no fear of a crop; and though it amount to only five hundred bushels on an acre, what crop is half so valuable?

126. The bulk of crop, however, in the broad-cast, or random method, may be materially affected by

When the corn (Indian) and turnips get to a size, sufficients to attract the appetite of the ox, you have only to put on a muzzle. This is what Mr. Tull did; for, though we ought not to muzzle the ox " as he treadeth out the corn," we may do it, even for his own sake, amongst other considerations, when he is assisting us to bring the crop to perfection.

drought; for in that case, the plough cannot come to supply the place of showers. The ground there will be dry, and keep dry in a dry time; as in the case of the supposed half rod of undug ground in the garden. The weeds, too, will come and help by their roots, to suck the moisture out of the ground. As to the handhoeings, they may keep down weeds to be sure, and they raise a trifling portion of exhalation; but, it is trifling indeed. Dry weather, if of long continuation, makes the leaves become of a bluish colour; and, when this is once the case, all the rain and all the fine weather in the world will never make the crop a good one; because the plough cannot move amidst this scene of endless irregularity. This is one of the chief reasons why the ridge method is best.

Uses of, and Mode of applying, the Crop.

be put to, than what uses it may be put to, in the feeding of animals. It is eaten greedily by sheep, horn-cattle, and hogs, in its raw state. Boiled, or steamed, (which is better), no dog that I ever saw will refuse it. Poultry of all sorts will live upon it in its cooked state. Some dogs will even eat it raw; a fact that I first became acquainted with by perceiving my Shepherd's dog eating in the field along with the sheep. I have two Spaniels that come into the barn and eat it now; and yet they are both in fine condition. Some horses will nearly live upon it in the raw state; others are not so fond of it.

128. Let me give an account of what I am doing now

(in the month of April) with my crop.

129. It is not pretended, that this root, measure for measure, is equal to Indian corn in the ear. Therefore, as I can get Indian corn in the ear for half a dollar a bushel, and, as I sell my Ruta Baga for half a dollar a bushel at New York, I am very sparing of the use of the latter for animals. Indeed, I use none at home, except such as have been injured, as above-mentioned, by the delay in the harvesting. These damaged roots I apply in the following manner.

130. Twice a day I take about two bushels, and scatter them about upon the grass for fifteen ewes with their lambs, and a few wether sheep, and for seven stout store pigs, which eat with them. Once a day I fling out a parcel of the refuse that have been cut from the roots sent to market, along with cabbage leaves and stems, parsnips, fibres, and the like. Here the working oxen, hogs, cows, sheep, and fowls, all feed as they please. All these animals are in excellent condition. The cow has no other food; the working oxen a lock of hay twice a day; the ewes an ear of Indian corn each; the pigs nothing but the roots; the fowls and ducks and turkeys are never fed in any other way, though they know how to feed themselves whenever there

is any thing good to be found above ground.

131. I am weaning some pigs, which, as every one knows, is an affair of milk and meal. I have neither. I give about three buckets of boiled Ruta Baga to seven pigs every day, not having any convenience for steaming; two baits of Indian corn in the ear. And, with this diet, increasing the quantity with the growth of the pigs, I expect to turn them out of the sty fatter (if that be possible) than they entered it. Now, if this be so, every farmer will say, that this is what never was done before in America. We all know how important a thing it is to wean a pig well. Any body can wean them without milk and meal; but, then, the pigs are good for nothing. They remain three months afterwards and never grow an inch; and they are, indeed, not worth having. To have milk, you must have cows, and cows are vast consumers! To have cows, you must have female labour, which, in America, is a very precious commodity. You cannot have meal without sharing in kind pretty liberal with the miller, besides bestowing labour, however busy you may be, to carry the corn to mill and bring the meal back. I am, however, speaking here of the pigs from my English breed; though I am far from supposing that the common pigs might not be weaned in the same way,

132. Sows with young pigs I feed thus: boiled Ruta Baga twice a day. About three ears of Indian corn a piece twice a day. As much offal Ruta Baga raw

as they will eat. Amongst this boiled Ruta Baga, the pot-liquor of the house goes, of course; but, then, the dogs, I dare say, take care that the best shall fall to their lot; and as there are four of them pretty fat, their share cannot be very small. Every one knows what good food, how much meal and milk are necessary to sows which have pigs. I have no milk, for my cow has not yet calved. And, then, what a chance concern this is; for, the sows may perversely have pigs at the time when the cows do not please to give milk; or, rather, when they, poor things, without any fault of theirs, are permitted to go dry, which never need be, and never ought to be the case. I had a cow lonce that made more than two pounds of butter during the week, and had a calf on the Saturday night. Cows always ought to be milked to the very day of their calving, and during the whole time of their suckling their calves. But, " sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof." Let us leave this matter till another time. Having, however, accidentally mentioned cows, I will just observe, that in the little publication of Mr. CRAMP, mentioned above, as having been printed by the Board of Agriculture, it was stated and the proof given, that his single cow gave him, clear profit, for several successive years, more than fifty pounds sterling a year, or upwards of two hundred and twenty dollars. This was clear profit; reckoning the food and labour, and taking credit for the calf, the butter, and for the skim-milk at a penny a quart only. Mr. CRAMP's was a Sussex cow. Mine were of the Alderney breed. Little small-boned things; but, two of my cows, fed upon three quarters of an acre of grass ground, in the middle of my shrubbery, and fastened to pins in the ground, which were shifted twice a-day, made three hundred pounds of butter from the 28th of March to the 27th of June. This is a finer country for cattle than England; and yet, what do I see! 133. This difficulty about feeding sows with young pigs and weaning pigs, is one of the greatest hinder-

ances to improvement; for, after all, what animal produces flesh meat like the hog? Applicable to all uses, either fresh or salted, is the meat. Good in all its various shapes. The animal killable at all ages.

Quickly fatted. Good if half fat. Capable of supporting an immense burden of fat. Demanding but little space for its accommodation; and yet, if grain and corn and milk are to be their principal food, during their lives, they cannot multiply very fast; because many upon a farm cannot be kept to much profit. But, if, by providing a sufficiency of Ruta Baga, a hundred pigs could be raised upon a farm in a year, and carried on till fatting time, they would be worth, when ready to go into the fatting sty, fifteen dollars each. This would be something worth attending to; and the farm must become rich from the manure. The Ruta Baga, taken out of the heaps early in April, will keep well and sound all the summer; and with a run in an orchard, or in a grassy place, it will keep a good sort of hog always in a very thriving, and even fleshy state.

134. This root, being called a turnip, is regarded as a turnip, as a common turnip, than which nothing can be much less resembling it. The common turnip is a very poor thing. The poorest of all the roots of the bulb kind, cultivated in the fields; and the Ruta Baga, all taken together, is, perhaps, the very best. It loses none of its good qualities by being long kept, though dry all the while. A neighbour of mine in Hampshire, having saved a large piece of Ruta Baga for seed, and having, after harvesting the seed, accidently thrown some of the roots into his yard, saw his hogs eat these old roots, which had borne the seed. He gave them some more, and saw that they ate them greedily. He, therefore, went and bought a whole drove, in number about forty, of lean pigs, of a good large size, brought them into his yard, carted in the roots of his seed Ruta Baga, and, without having given the pigs a handful of any other sort of food, sold out his pigs as fat porkers. And, indeed, it is a fact well known, that sheep and cattle, as well as hogs, will thrive upon this root after it has borne seed, which is what, I believe, can be said of no other root or plant.

135. When we feed off our Ruta Baga in the fields, in England, by sheep, there are small parts left by the sheep: the shells which they have left after scooping out the pulp of the bulb; the tap-root; and other little

bits. These are picked out of the ground, and when washed by the rain, other sheep follow and live upon them. Or, in default of other sheep, hogs or cattle are turned in in dry weather, and they leave not a morsel.

136. Nor are the greens to be forgotten. In England, they are generally eaten by the sheep, when they are turned in upon them. When the roots are taken up for uses at the home-stead, the greens are given to store-pigs and lean cattle. I cut mine off, while the roots were in the ground, and gave them to fatting cattle upon grass land, alternately with Indian corn in the ear; and, in this way, they are easily and most profitably applied, and they come too, just after the grass is gone from the pastures. An acre produces about four good wagon loads of greens; and they are taken off fresh and fresh as they are wanted, and, at the same time, the roots are thus made ready for going at once, into the heaps. Pigs, sheep, cattle; all like the greens as well as they do the roots. Try any of them with the greens of white turnips; and, if they touch them, they will have changed their natures, or, at least, their tastes.

and the parsnip, are all useful, and the latter, that is to say, the parsnip, very valuable indeed; but the main cattle-crop is the Ruta Baga. Even the white turnip, if well cultivated, may be of great use; and, as it admits of being sown later, it may often be very desirable to raise it. But reserving myself to speak fully, in a future part of my work, of my experiments as to these crops, I shall now make a short enquiry as to the value of a crop of Ruta Baga, compared with the value of any other crop. I will just observe, in this place, however, that I have grown finer carrots, parsnips, and Mangle Wurzel, and even finer cabbages, than I ever grew upon the richest land in Hampshire, though not a seed of any of them was put into the ground till the

month of June.

138. A good mode, it appears to me, of making my proposed comparative estimate, will be to say, how I would proceed, supposing me to have a farm of my own

in this island, of only one hundred acres. If there were not twelve acres of orchard near the house, I would throw as much grass land to the orchard as would make up the twelve acres, which I could fence in an effectual manner against small pigs as well as large oxen.

139. Having done this, I would take care to have fifteen acres of good Indian corn, well planted, well suckered, and well tilled in all respects. Good, deep ploughing between the plants would give me forty bushels of shelled corn to an acre; and a ton to the acre of fodder for my four working oxen and three cows, and my sheep and hogs, of which I shall speak presently.

140. I would have twelve acres of Ruta Baga, three acres of early cabbages, an acre of Mangel Wurzel, an acre of carrots and parsnips, and as many white turnips as would grow between my rows of Indian corn

after my last ploughing of that crop.

141. With these crops, which would occupy thirtytwo acres of ground, I should not fear being able to keep a good house in all sorts of meat, together with butter and milk, and to send to market nine quarters of beef and three hides, a hundred early fat lambs, a hundred hogs, weighing twelve score, as we call it in Hampshire, or, two hundred and forty pounds each, These altogether, would and a hundred fat ewes. amount to about three thousand dollars, exclusive of the cost of a hundred ewes and of three oxen; I should hope, that the produce of my trees in the orchard and of the other fifty-six acres of my farm would pay the rent and the labour; for, as to taxes, the amount is not worth naming, especially after the sublime spectacle of that sort, which the world beholds in England.

142. I am, you will perceive, not making any account of the price of Ruta Baga, cabbages, carrots, parsnips, and white turnips at New York, or any other market. I now, indeed, sell carrots and parsnips at three quarters of a dollar the hundred, by tale; cabbages (of last fall) at about three dollars a hundred, and white turnips at a quarter of a dollar a bushel. When this can be done, and the distance is within twenty or thirty miles on the best road in the world, it will, of

course, be done; but, my calculations are built upon a supposed consumption of the whole upon the farm by

animals of one sort or another.

143. My feeding would be nearly as follows. I will begin with February; for, until then, the Ruta Baga does not come to its sweetest taste. It is like an apple, that must have time to ripen; but, then, it retains its goodness much longer. I have proved, and especially in the feeding of hogs, that the Ruta Baga is never so good, till it arrives at a mature state. In February, and about the first of that month, I should begin bringing in my Ruta Baga, in the manner before described. My three oxen, which would have been brought forward by other food, to be spoken of by and by, would be tied up in a stall looking into one of those fine commodious barn's floors which we have upon this island. Their stall should be warm, and they should be kept well littered, and cleaned out frequently. The Ruta Baga just chopped into large pieces with a spade or shovel, and tossed into the manger to the oxen at the rate of about two bushels a day to each ox, would make them completely fat, without the aid of corn, hay, or any other thing. I should, probably, kill one ox at Christmas, and, in that case, he must have had a longer time than the others upon other food. If I killed one of the two remaining oxen in the middle of March, and the other on the first of May, they would consume 266 bushels of Ruta Baga.

144. My hundred ewes would begin upon Ruta Baga at the same time, and, as my grass ground would be only twelve acres until after hay-time, I shall suppose them to be fed on this root till July, and they will always eat it and thrive on it. They will eat about eight pounds each, a day; so that, for 150 days it would require a hundred and twenty thousand pounds

weight, or two thousand four hundred bushels.

145. Fourteen breeding sows to be kept all the year round, would bring a hundred pigs in the spring, and they and their pigs would, during the same 150 days, consume much about the same quantity; for, though the pigs would be small during these 150 days, yet they eat a great deal more than sheep in proportion to

their size, or rather bulk. However, as they would eat very little during the first 60 days of their age, I have

rather over-rated their consumption.

146. Three cows and four working oxen would, during the 150 days, consume about one thousand bushels, which, indeed, would be more than sufficient, because, during a great part of the time, they would more than half live upon corn-stalks; and, indeed, this, to a certain extent, would be the case with the sheep. However, as I mean that every thing should be of a good size, and live well, I make ample provision.

147. I should want, then, to raise five hundred bushels of Ruta Baga upon each of my twelve acres; and why should I not do it, seeing that I have this year raised six hundred and forty bushels upon an acre, under circumstances such as I have stated them? I lay it down, therefore, that, with a culture as good as that of Indian corn, any man may, on this island (where corn will

grow) have 500 bushels to the acre.

148. I am now come to the first of July. My oxen. are fatted and disposed of. My lambs are gone to market, the last of them a month ago. My pigs are weaned and of a good size. And now my Ruta Baga is gone. But my ewes, kept well through the winter, will soon be fat upon the 12 acres of orchard and the hayground, aided by my three acres of early cabbages, which are now fit to begin cutting, or, rather, pulling up. The weight of this crop may be made very great Ten thousand plants will stand upon an acre, in four feet ridges, and every plant ought to weigh three pounds at least. I have shewn before how advantageously Ruta Baga transplanted would follow these cabbages, all through the months of July and August. But what a crop of Buck-wheat would follow such of the cabbages as came off in July! My cabbages, together with my hay-fields and grain-fields after harvest, and about forty or fifty wagon loads of Ruta Baga greens would carry me along well till December (the cabbages being planted a different times); for my ewes would be sold fat in July, and my pigs would be only increasing in demand for food; and the new hundred ewes need not,

and ought not, to be kept so well as if they were fatting,

or had lambs by their side.

bruary, Mangel Wurzel and white turnips would keep the sheep and cattle and breeding sows plentifully; for the latter will live well upon Mangel Wurzel; and my hundred hogs, intended for fatting, would be much more than half fat upon the carrots and parsnips. I should, however, more probably keep my parsnips till Spring, and mix the feeding with carrots with the feeding with corn, for the first month or fifteen days, with regard to the fatting hogs. None of these hogs would require more than three bushels of corn each to finish them completely. My other three hundred bushels would be for sows giving suck; the ewes, now and then in wet weather; and for other occasional purposes.

150. Thus all my hay and oats, and wheat and rye might be sold, leaving me the straw for litter. These, surely, would pay the rent and the labour; and, if I am told, that I have taken no account of the mutton, and lamb, and pork, that my house would demand, neither have I taken any account of a hundred summer vigs, which the fourteen sows would have, and which would hardly fail to bring two hundred dollars. Poulty demand some food; but three parts of their raising consists of care; and, if I had nobody in my house to sestow this care, I should, of course, have the less num-

er of mouths to feed.

151. But, my horses! Will not they swallow my hay and my oats? No: for I want no horses. But, am I never to take a ride then? Aye, but if I do, I have no ight to lay the expense of it to the account of the farm. am speaking of how a man may live by and upon a arm. If a merchant spend a thousand a year, and ain a thousand, does he say, that his traffic has gained im nothing? When men lose money by farming, as ney call it, they forget, that it is not the farming, but ther expenses that take away their money. It is, in act, they that rob the farm, and not the farm them. I lorses may be kept for the purposes of going to church, to meeting, or to pay visits. In many cases this ay be not only convenient, but necessary, to a family;

but, upon this Island, I am very sure, that it is neither convenient nor necessary to a farm. "What!" the ladies will say, "would you have us to be shut up at home all our lives; or be dragged about by oxen!" By no means; not I! I should be very sorry to be thought the author of any such advice. I have no sort of objection to the keeping of horses upon a farm; but, I do insist upon it, that all the food and manual labour required by such horses, ought to be considered as so much taken from the clear profits of the farm.

152. I have made sheep, and particularly lambs, a part of my supposed stock; but, I do not know, that I should keep any beyond what might be useful for my house. Hogs are the most profitable stock, if you have a large quantity of the food that they will thrive on. They are foul feeders; but, they will eat nothing that is poor in its nature; that is to say, they will not thrive on it. They are the most able tasters in all the creation; and, that which they like best, you may be quite sure has the greatest proportion of nutritious matter in it, from a white turnip to a piece of beef. They will prefer meat to corn, and cooked meat to raw; they will leave parsnips for corn or grain; they will leave carrots for parsnips; they will leave Ruta Baga for carrots; they will leave cabbages for Ruta Baga; they will leave Mangel Wurzel for cabbages; they will leave potatoes (both being raw) for Mangel Wurzel. A white turnip they will not touch, unless they be on the point of starving. They are the best of triers. Whatever they prefer is sure to be the richest thing within their reach. The parsnip is, by many degrees, the richest root; but, the seed lies long in the ground; the sowing and after-culture are works of great niceness. The crop is large with good cultivation, but, as a main crop, I prefer the Ruta Baga, of which the crop is immense, and the harvesting, and preserving, and application of which, are so easy.

153. The farm I suppose to be in fair condition to start with; the usual grass seeds sown, and so forth; and every farmer will see, that, under my system, it must soon become rich as any garden need to be, without my sending men and horses to the water-side to

fetch ashes, which have been brought from Boston or Charleston, an average distance of seven hundred miles! In short, my stock would give me, in one shape or another, manure to the amount, in utility, of more than a thousand tons weight a year of common yard manure. This would be ten tons to an acre every year. The farm would, in this way, become more and more productive; and, as to its being too rich, I see no danger of that; for a broad-cast crop of wheat will, at any

time, tame it pretty sufficiently.

154. Very much, in my opinion, do those mistake the matter, who strive to get a great breadth of land, with the idea, that, when they have tried one field, they can let it lie, and go to another. It is better to have one acre of good crop, than two of bad or indifferent. If the one acre can by double the manure and double the labour in tillage, be made to produce as much as two other acres, the one acre is preferable, because it requires only half as much fencing, and little more than half as much harvesting, as two acres. There is many a ten acres of land near London, that produces more han any common farm of two hundred acres. My garden of three quarters of an acre, produced more, in value, last Summer, from June to December, than any en acres of oat land upon Long Island, though I there saw as fine fields of oats as I ever saw in my life. A heavy crop upon all the ground that I put a plough into s what I should seek, rather than to have a great quantity of land.

155. The business of carting manure from a distance can, in very few, if any cases, answer a profitable purpose. If any man would give me even horse-dung at the stable-door, four miles from my land, I would not accept of it, on condition of fetching it. I say the same of spent ashes. To manure a field of ten acres, in this way, a man and two horses must be employed twenty lays at least, with twenty days' wear and tear of wagon and tackle. Two oxen and two men do the business in

wo days, if the manure be on the spot.

156. In concluding my remarks on the subject of tuta Baga, I have to apologize for the desultory maner in which I have treated the matter; but, I have

F 2

put the thoughts down as they occurred to me, without much time for arrangement, wishing very much to get this First Part into the hands of the public before the arrival of the time for sowing Ruta Baga this present year. In the succeeding Parts of the work, I propose to treat of the culture of every other plant that I have found to be of use upon a farm; and also to speak fully of the sorts of cattle, sheep and hogs, particularly the latter. My experiments are now going on; and, I shall only have to communicate the result, which I shall do very faithfully, and with as much clearness as I am able. In the mean while, I shall be glad to afford any opportunity, to any persons who may think it worth while to come to Hyde Park, of seeing how I proceed. I have just now (17th April) planted out my Ruta Baga, Cabbages, Mangel Wurzel, Onions, Parsnips, &c. for seed. I shall begin my earth-burning in about fifteen days. In short, being convinced, that I am able to communicate very valuable improvements; and not knowing how short, or how long, my stay in America may be, I wish very much to leave behind me whatever of good I am able, in return for the protection which America has afforded me against the fangs of the Boroughmongers of England; to which country, however, I always bear affection, which I cannot feel towards any other in the same degree, and the prosperity and honour of which I shall, I hope, never cease to prefer before the gratification of all private pleasures and emoluments.

END

Of the Treatise on Ruta Baga,

AND OF PART I.

YEAR'S RESIDENCE,

IN THE

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

PART II.

Containing,—III. Experiments as to Cabbages.—IV. Earthburning. —V. Transplanting Indian Corn. —VI. Swedish Turnips. —VII. Potatoes. —VIII. Cows, Sheep, Hogs, and Poultry.—IX. Prices of Land, Labour, Working Cattle, Husbandry Implements.—X. Expenses of Housekeeping.—XI. Manners, Customs, and Character of the People.—XII. Rural Sports.—XIII. Paupers and Beggars.—XIV. Government, Laws, and Religion.

VELVER OF DESIDENCE.

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

AL THAT

PREFACE

TO THE

SECOND PART.

157. In the First Part I adopted the mode of numbering the paragraphs, a mode which I shall pursue to the end of the work; and, as the whole work may, at the choice of the purchaser, be bound up in one volume, or remain in two volumes, I have thought it best to resume the numbering at the point where I stopped at the close of the First Part. The last paragraph of that Part was 156: I, therefore, now begin with 157. For the same reason I have, in the Second Part, resumed the paging at the point where I stopped in the First Part. I have, in like manner, resumed the chaptering: so that, when the two Parts are put together, they will, as to these matters, form but one; and those, who may have purchased the volumes separately, will possess the same book, in all respects, as those, who shall purchase the Three Parts in one Volume.

158. Paragraph 1. (Part I.) contains my reasons for numbering the paragraphs, but, besides the reasons there stated, there is one, which did not then occur to me, and which was left to be suggested by experience,

of a description which I did not then anticipate; namely, that, in the case of more than one edition, the paging may, and generally does, differ in such manner as to bring the matter, which, in one edition, is under any given page, under a different page in another edition. This renders the work of reference very laborious at best, and, in many cases, it defeats its object. If the paragraphs of Blackstone's Commentatives had been numbered, how much valuable time it would have saved! I hope, that these reasons will be sufficient to convince the reader that I have not, in this case, been actuated by a love of singularity. We live to learn, and to make improvements, and every improvement must, at first, be a singularity.

159. The utility, which I thought would arise from the hastening out of the First Part, in June last, previous to the time for sowing Swedish Turnips, induced me to make an ugly breach in the order of my little work; and, as it generally happens, that when disorder is once begun, it is very difficult to restore order; so, in this case, I have been exceedingly puzzled to give to the matter of these two last Parts such an arrangement as should be worthy of a work, which, whatever may be the character of its execution, treats of subjects of great public interest. However, with the help of the Index, which I shall subjoin to the Third Part, and which will comprise a reference to the divers matters in all the three parts, and in the making of which Index an additional proof of the advantage of numbering the paragraphs has appeared; with the help of this Index the reader will, I am in hopes, be enabled to overcome, without any very great trouble, the inconveniences

naturally arising from the want of a perfectly good arrangement of the subjects of the work.

160. As the First Part closes with a promise to communicate the result of my experiments of this present year, I begin the Second Part with a fulfilment of that promise, particularly with regard to the procuring of manura by the burning of earth into ashes.

161. I then proceed with the other matters named in the title; and the Third Part I shall make to consist of an account of the Western Countries, furnished in the Notes of Mr. Hulme, together with a view of the advantages and disadvantages of preferring, as a place to farm in, those Countries to the Countries bordering on the Atlantic; in which view I shall include such remarks as appear to me likely to be useful to those English Farmers, who can no longer bear the lash of Boroughmongering oppression and insolence.

work of any kind. I feel the consciousness of this fault upon this occasion. The facts and opinions relative to Swedish Turnips and Cabbages will be very apt to be enfeebled in their effect by those relating to manners, laws and religion. Matters so heterogeneous, the one class treated of in the detail and the other in the great, ought not to be squeezed together between the boards of the same small volume. But, the fault is committed and it is too late to repine. There are, however, two subjects which I will treat of distinctly hereafter. The first is that of Fencing, a subject which presses itself upon the attention of the American Farmer, but from which he turns with feelings like

those, with which a losing tradesman turns from an examination of his books. But, attend to it he must before it be long; or, his fields, in the populous parts of this Island at least, must lay waste, and his fuel must be brought him from Virginia or from England. Sometime before March next I shall publish an Essay on Fencing. The form shall correspond with that of this work, in order that it may be bound up with it, if that should be thought desirable. The other subject is that of Gardening. This I propose to treat of in a small distinct volume, under some appropriate title; and, in this volume, to give alphabetically, a description of all the plants, cultivated for the use of the table and also of those cultivated as cattle food. To this description I shall add an account of their properties, and instructions for the cultivation of them in the best manner. It is not my intention to go beyond what is aptly enough called the Kitchen Garden; but, as a hot-bed may be of such great use even to the farmer; and as ample materials for making beds of this sort are always at his command without any expense, I shall endeavour to give plain directions for the making and managing of a hot-bed. A bed of this sort, fifteen feet long, has given me, this year, the better part of an acre of fine cabbages to give to hogs in the parching month of July. This is so very simple a matter; it is so very easy to learn; that there is scarcely a farmer in America, who would not put the thing in practice, at once, without complete success.

163. Let not my countrymen, who may happen to read this suppose, that these, or any other, pursuits will withdraw my attention from, or slacken my zeal

in, that cause, which is common to us all. That cause claims, and has, my first attention and best exertion; that is the business of my life: these other pursuits are my recreation. King Alfred allowed eight hours for recreation, in the twenty-four, eight for sleep, and eight for business. I do not take my allowance of the two former.

expressed a hope to be able to give, in some part of this work, a sketch of the work of Mr. Tull. I have looked at Tull, and I cannot bring my mind up to the commission of so horrid an act as that of garbling such a work. It was, perhaps, a feeling, such as that which I experience at this moment, which restrained Mr. Curwen from even naming Tull, when he gave one of Tull's experiments to the world as a discovery of his own. Unable to screw himself up to commit a murder, he contented himself with a robbery; an instance, he may, indeed, say, of singular moderation and self-denial; especially when we consider of what an assembly he has, with little intermission, been an "Honourable Member" for the last thirty years of his life.

WM. COBBETT.

North Hempstead, Long Island, 15th November, 1818. expensed a hope to he able to give; in come part of also expensed a hope to he able to give; in come part of also work; a sheet to hope to he able to give; in come part of also work; a sheet outle a whep of the constant of grabling much a work; the able to he able to the constant of grabling much a work; it was, periage, a facting, such as that which I experience at this moment, which restrained like I as weak from over moment, which restrained like I as weak from over moment, which restrained like I as weak from over moment, which restrained like I as weak from over moment, which restrained like I as weak from over moment in the gard bar of the own.

indeed, say, of singular moderation and soft-dealed; saperally when we emission, of what en severally he had ever the intermission, been as a Homographe

concepted himself with a choosey; an instance, he man,

Magazor : for the last threy years of his line.

TERRESCO SON

Stat deposit hat

YEAR'S RESIDENCE,

&c.

CHAP. III.

EXPERIMENTS, IN 1818, AS TO CABBAGES.

Preliminary Remarks.

165. At the time when I was writing the First Part, I expected to be able to devote more time to my farming, during the summer, than I afterwards found that I could so devote without neglecting matters which I deem of greater importance. I was, indeed, obliged to leave the greater part of my out-door's business wholly to my men, merely telling them what to do. However, I attended to the things which I thought to be of the most importance. The field-culture of Carrots, Parsnips and Mangle Wurzel I did not attempt. I contented myself with a crop of Cabbages and of Ruta Baga, and with experiments as to Earth-burning and Transplanting Indian Corn. The summer, and the fall also, have been remarkably dry in Long Island, much more dry than is usual. The grass has been very short indeed. A sort of Grass-hopper, or cricket, has eaten up a considerable part of the grass and of all vegetables, the leaves of which have come since the month of June. I am glad, that this has been the case; for I now know what a farmer may do in the worst of years; and, when I consider what the summer has been, I look at my Cabbages and Ruta Baga with surprise as well as with satisfaction.

CABBAGES.

166. I had some hogs to keep, and, as my Swedish Turnips (Ruta Baga) would be gone by July, or before, I wished them to be succeeded by cabbages. I made a hot-bed on the 20th of March, which ought to have been made more than a month earlier; but, I had been in Pennsylvania, and did not return home till the 13th of March. It requires a little time to mix and turn the dung in order to prepare it for a hot-bed; so that mine was not a very good one; and then my frame was hastily patched up, and its covering consisted of some old broken sashes of windows. A very shabby concern; but, in this bed I sowed cabbages and cauliflowers. The seed came up, and the plants, though standing too thick, grew pretty well. From this bed, they would, if I had had time, have been transplanted into another, at about two and a half or three inches apart. But, such as they were, very much drawn up, I began planting them out as soon as they were about four inches high.

167. It was the 12th of May before they attained this height, and I then began planting them out in a piece of ground, pretty good, and deeply ploughed by oxen. My cauliflowers, of which there were about three thousand, were too late to flower, which they never will do, unless the flower have begun to shew itself before the great heat comes. However, these plants grew very large, and afforded a great quantity of food for pigs. The outside leaves and stems were eaten by sows, store-pigs, a cow, and some oxen; the hearts, which were very tender and nearly of the Cauliflower-taste, were boiled in a large cast-iron caldron, and, mixed with a little rye-meal, given to sows and young pigs. I should suppose, that these three thousand plants weighed twelve hundred pounds, and they stood upon about half an acre of land. I gave these

to the animals early in July.

168. The Cabbages, sown in the bed, consisted partly of Early Yorks, the seed of which had been sent me along with the Cauliflower seed, from England, and

had reached me at Harrisburgh in Pennsylvania; and partly of plants, the seeds of which had been given me by Mr. James Paul, Senior, of Bustleton, as I was on my return home. And this gave me a pretty good opportunity of ascertaining the fact as to the degenerating of cabbage seed. Mr. Paul, who attended very minutely to all such matters; who took great delight in his garden; who was a reading as well as a practical farmer, told me, when he gave me the seed, that it would not produce loaved cabbages so early as my own seed would; for, that, though he had always selected the earliest heads for seed, the seed degenerated, and the cabbages regularly came to perfection later and later. He said, that he never should save cabbage seed himself; but, that it was such chance-work to buy of seedsmen, that he thought it best to save some at any rate. In this case, all the plants from the English seed produced solid loaves by the 24th of June, while, from the plants of the Pennsylvania seed, we we had not a single solid loaf till the 28th of July, and, from the chief part of them, not till mid-August.

169. This is a great matter. Not only have you the food earlier, and so much earlier, from the genuine seed, but your ground is occupied so much less time by the plants. The plants very soon showed, by their appearance, what would be the result; for, on the 2nd of June, Miss Sarah Paul, a daughter of Mr. James Paul, saw the plants, and while those from the English seed were even then beginning to loave, those from her ather's seed were nothing more than bunches of wide spreading leaves, having no appearance of forming a nead. However, they succeeded the plants from the English seed; and, the whole, besides what were used n the House, were given to the animals. As many of he white loaves as were wanted for the purpose were poiled for sows and small pigs, and the rest were given o lean pigs, and the horn-cattle: and a fine resource hey were; for, so dry was the weather, and the devasations of the grass-hoppers so great, that we had scarcely any grass in any part of the land; and, if I had not had these cabbages, I must have resorted to Indian Corn, or Grain of some sort.

170. But, these spring-cabbage plants were to be succeeded by others, to be eaten in September and onwards to January. Therefore, on the 27th of May, I sowed in the natural ground eleven sorts of cabbages, some of the seed from England and some got from my friend, Mr. PAUL. I have noticed the extreme drought of the season. Nevertheless, I have now about two acres of cabbages of the following description. Half an acre of the Early Salisbury (earliest of all cabbages) and Early York; about 3 quarters of an acre of the Drum-head and other late cabbages; and about the same quantity of Green Savoys. The first class are fully loaved, and bursting: with these I now feed my animals. These will be finished by the time that I cut off my Swedish Turnip Greens, as mentioned in Part I. Paragraph 136. Then, about mid-December, I shall feed with the second class, the Drum-heads and other late Cabbages. Then, those which are not used before the hard frosts set in, I shall put up for use through the month of January.

171. Aye! Put them up; but how? No scheme that industry or necessity ever sought after, or that experience ever suggested, with regard to the preserving of cabbages, did I leave untried last year; and, in every scheme but one I found some inconvenience. Taking them up and replanting them closely in a sloping manner and covering them with straw; putting them in pits; hanging them up in a barn; turning their heads downwards and covering them with earth, leaving the roots sticking up in the air: in short every scheme, except one, was attended with great labour, and some of them forbade the hope of being able to preserve any considerable quantity; and this one was as follows: I made a sort of land with the plough, and made it pretty level at top. Upon this land I laid some straw. I then took the cabbages, turned them upside down, and placed them (first taking off all decayed leaves) about six abreast upon the straw. Then covered them, not very thickly, with leaves raked up in the woods, flinging now and then a little dirt (boughs of any sort would be better) to prevent the leaves from being carried off by the wind, So that, when the work was done, the thing was a bed

of leaves with cabbage-roots sticking up through it. I only put on enough leaves to hide all the green. If the frost came and prevented the taking up of the cabbages, roots and all, they might be cut off close to the ground. The root, I dare say, is of no use in the preservation. In the months of April and May, I took cabbages of all sorts from this land perfectly good and fresh. The quantity, preserved thus, was small. It might amount to 200 cabbages. But, it was quite sufficient for the purpose. Not only did the cabbages keep better in this, than in any other way, but there they were, at all times, ready. The frost had locked up all those which were covered with earth, and those which lay with heads apwards and their roots in the ground were rotting. But, to this land I could have gone at any time, and have brought away, if the quantity had been large, a wagon oad in ten minutes. If they had been covered with now (no matter how deep) by uncovering twenty feet n length (a work of little labour) half a ton of cabbages would have been got at. This year, thinking that my Savoys, which are, at once, the best in quality and best o keep, of all winter cabbages, may be of use to send o New York, I have planted them between rows of Broom-Corn. The Broom-Corn is in rows, eight feet part. This enabled us to plough deep between the Broom-Corn, which, though in poor land, has been very ine. The heads are cut off; and now the stalks remain o be used as follows: I shall make lands up the piece, out off the stalks and lay them, first a layer longways and then a layer crossways, upon the lands. Upon hese I shall put my Savoys turned upside down; and, is the stalks will be more than sufficient for this purpose, shall lay some of them over, instead of dirt or boughs, s mentioned before. Perhaps the leaves of the Broom-Corn, which are lying about in great quantities, may uffice for covering. And, thus, all the materials for the vork are upon the spot.

172. In quitting this matter, I may observe, that, to over cabbages thus, in gardens as well as fields, would, a many cases, be of great use in *England*, and of still nore use in Scotland. Sometimes, a quick succession of frost, snow and thaw will completely rot every loaved

cabbage even in the South of England. Indeed no reliance is placed upon cabbages for use, as cattle-food, later than the month of December. The bulk is so large that a protection by houses of any sort cannot be thought of. Besides, the cabbages, put together in large masses would heat and quickly rot. In gentlemen's gardens, indeed, cabbages are put into houses, where they are hung up by the heads. But, they wither in this state, or they soon putrefy even here. By adopting the mode of preserving, which I have described above, all these inconveniences would be avoided. Any quantity might be preserved either in fields or in gardens at a very trifling expense, compared with the bulk of the crop.

173. As to the application of my Savoys, and part of the Drum-heads, too, indeed, if I find cabbages very dear, at New York, in winter, I shall send them; if not, there they are for my cattle and pigs. The weight of them will not be less, I should think, than ten tons. The plants were put out by two men in one day; and I shall think it very hard if two men do not put the whole completely up in a week. The Savoys are very fine. little too late planted out; but still very fine; and they were planted out under a burning sun and without a drop of rain for weeks afterwards. So far from taking any particular pains about these Savoys, I did not see them planted, and I never saw them for more than two months after they were planted. The ground for them was prepared thus: the ground, in each interval between the Broom-Corn, had been, some little time before, ploughed to the rows. This left a deep furrow in the middle of the interval. Into this furrow I put the manure. It was a mixture of good mould and dung from pigstyes. The wagon went up the interval, and the manure was drawn out and tumbled into the furrow. Then the plough went twice on each side of the furrow, and turned the earth over the manure. This made a ridge, and upon this ridge the plants were planted as quickly after the plough as possible.

174. Now, then, what is the trouble; what is the expense, of all this? The seed was excellent. I do not recollect ever having seen so large a piece of the cabbage kind with so few spurious plants. But, though

good cabbage seed is of high price, I should suppose, that the seed did not cost me a quarter of a dollar. Suppose, however, it had cost ten quarters of a dollar; what would that have been, compared to the worth of the crop! For, what is the worth of ten tons of green,

or moist food, in the month of March or April?

175. The Swedish Turnip is, indeed, still more conveniently preserved, and is a richer food; but, there are some reasons for making part of the year's provision to consist of cabbages. As far as a thing may depend on chance, two chances are better than one. In the summer and fall, cabbages get ripe, and, as I have observed, in Part I. Paragraph 143, the Ruta Baga (which we will call Swedish Turnip for the future) is not so good 'till it be ripe; and is a great deal better when kept 'till February, than when used in December. This matter of ripeness is worthy of attention. Let any one eat a piece of white cabbage; and then eat a piece of the same sort of cabbage young and green. The first he will find sweet, the latter bitter. It is the same with Turnips, and with all roots. There are some apples, wholly uneatable 'till kept a while, and then delicious. This is the case with the Swedish Turnip. Hogs will, indeed, always eat it, young or old; but, it is not nearly so good early, as it is when kept 'till February. However, in default of other things, I would feed with it even in November.

176. For these reasons I would have my due proportion of cabbages, and I would always, if possible, have some Green Savoys; for it is, with cabbages, too, not only quantity which we ought to think of. Drum-head, and some others, are called cattle-cabbage; and hence, in England, there is an idea, that the more lelicate kinds of cabbage are not so good for cattle. But, the fact is, that they are as much better for cattle, han the coarse cabbages are, as they are better for us. It would be strange indeed, that reversing the principle of our general conduct, we should give cabbage of the pest quality to cattle, and keep that of the worst quality for ourselves. In London, where taxation has kept the streets as clear of bits of meat left on bones as the hogs endeavour to keep the streets of New York, there are people who go about selling "dog's meat." This consists of boiled garbage. But, it is not pretended, I suppose, that dogs will not eat roast-beef; nor, is it, I suppose, imagined, that they would not prefer the roast-beef, if they had their choice? Some people pretend, that garbage and carrion are better for dogs than beef and mutton are. That it is to say, it is better for us, that they should live upon things, which we ourselves loath, than that they should share with us. Self-interest

is, but too frequently, a miserable logician.

177. However, with regard to cattle, sheep, and pigs, as we intend to eat them, their claim to our kindness is generally more particularly and impartially listened to than that of the poor dogs; though that of the latter, founded, as it is, on their sagacity, their fidelity, their real utility, as the guardians of our folds, our homesteads and our houses, and as the companions, or, rather, the givers, of our healthful sports, is ten thousand times more strong, than that of animals which live to eat, sleep, and grow fat. But, to return to the cabbages, the fact is, that all sorts of animals, which will eat them at all, like the most delicate kinds best; and, as some of these are also the earliest kinds, they ought to be cultivated for cattle. Some of the larger kinds may be cultivated too; but, they cannot be got ripe till the fall of the year. Nor is the difference in the weight of the crop so great as may be imagined. On the same land, that will bear a Drum-head of twenty pounds, an Early York, or Early Battersea will weigh four pounds; and these may be fifteen inches asunder in the row, while the Drum-head requires four feet. Mind, I always suppose the rows to be four feet apart, as stated in the First Part of this work, and for the reasons there stated. Besides the advantages of having some cabbages early, the early ones remain so little a time upon the ground. Transplanted Swedish Turnips, or Buckwheat, or late Cabbages, especially Savoys, may always follow them the same year upon the same land. My early cabbages, this year, have been followed by a second crop of the same, and now (mid-November) they are hard and white and we are giving them to the animals.

178. There is a convenience attending cabbages, which attends no other of the cattle-plants, namely, that

of raising the plants with very little trouble and upon a small bit of ground. A little bed will give plants for an acre or two. The expense of seed, even of the dearest kinds, is a mere trifle, not worth any man's notice.

179. For these reasons I adhere to cabbages as the companion crop of Swedish Turnips. The Mangel Wurzel is long in the ground. In seasons of great lrought, it comes up unevenly. The weeds get the start of it. Its tillage must begin before it hardly shows tself. It is of the nature of the Beet, and it requires he care which the Beet requires. The same may be aid of Carrots and Parsnips. The cabbage, until it pe fit to plant out, occupies hardly any ground. An nour's work cleans the bed of weeds; and there the plants are always ready, when the land is made ready. The Mangel Wurzel root, if quite ripe, is richer than a white loaved cabbage; but, it is not more easily preerved, and will not produce a larger crop. Cattle will eat the leaves, but hogs will not, when they can get the eaves of cabbages. Nevertheless, some of this root nay be cultivated. It will fat an ox well; and it will at sheep well. Hogs will do well on it in winter. I would, if I were a settled farmer, have some of it; but, t is not a thing upon which I would place my dependence.

180. As to the time of sowing cabbages, the first owing should be in a hot-bed, so as to have the plants month old when the frost leaves the ground. The econd sowing should be when the natural ground has ecome warm enough to make the weeds begin to come p freely. But, seed-beds of cabbages, and, indeed, f every thing, should be in the open: not under a fence, whatever may be the aspect. The plants are sure to be reak, if sown in such situations. They should have he air coming freely to them in every direction. In a ot-bed, the seed should be sown in rows, three inches part, and the plants might be thinned out to one in a uarter of an inch. This would give about ten thousand lants in a bed ten feet long, and five wide. They will tand thus to get to a tolerable size without injuring ach other, if the bed be well managed as to heat and ir. In the open ground, where room is plenty, the

rows may be a foot apart, and the plants two inches apart in the rows. This will allow of hoeing, and here the plants will grow very finely. Mind, a large cabbage plant, as well as a large turnip plant, is better than a small one. All will grow, if well planted; but the large plant will grow best, and will, in the end, be

the finest cabbage.

181. We have a way, in England, of greatly improving the plants; but, I am almost afraid to mention it, lest the American reader should be frightened at the bare thought of the trouble. When the plants, in the seed-bed, have got leaves about an inch broad, we take them up, and transplant them in fresh ground, at about four inches apart each way. Here they get stout and straight; and, in about three weeks time, we transplant them again into the ground where they are to come to perfection. This is called pricking out. When the plant is removed the second time, it is found to be furnished with new roots, which have shot out of the butts of the long tap, or forked roots, which proceeded from the seed. It, therefore, takes again more readily to the ground, and has some earth adhere to in its passage. One hundred of pricked-out plants are always looked upon as worth three hundred from the seed-bed. In short, no man, in England, unless he be extremely negligent, ever plants out form the seed-bed. Let any farmer try this method with only a score of plants. He may do it with three minutes' labour. Surely, he may spare three minutes, and I will engage, that, if he treat these plants afterwards as he does the rest, and, if all be treated well, and the crop a fair one, the three minutes will give him fifty pounds weight of any of the larger sorts of cabbages. Plants are thus raised, then taken up and tied neatly in bundles, and then brought out of Dorsetshire and Wiltshire, and sold in Hampshiref or three-pence (about six cents) a hundred. thatit cannot require the heart of a lion to encounter the labour attending the raising of a few thousands of plants.

182. However, my plants, this year, have all gone into the field from the seed-bed; and, in so fine a climate, it may do very well; only great care is ne

cessary to be taken to see that they be not too thick in the seed-bed.

183. As to the preparation of the land, as to the manuring, as to the distance of the rows from each other, as to the act of planting, and as to the after culture, all are the same as in the case of transplanted Swedish Turnips; and, therefore, as to these matters, he reader has seen enough in Part I. There is one observation to make, as to the depth to which the plant hould be put into the ground. It should be placed so leep, that the stems of the outside leaves be just clear of the ground; for, if you put the plant deeper, the ain will wash the loose earth in amongst the stems of he leaves, which will make an open poor cabbage; .nd, if the plant be placed so low as for the heart to be overed with dirt, the plant, thought it will live, will ome to nothing. Great care must, therefore, be taken s to this matter. If the stem of the plant be long, oots will burst out nearly all the way up to the surface f the earth.

184. The distances at which cabbages ought to stand a the rows must depend on the sorts. The following nearly about the mark. Early Salisbury a foot: Carly York fifteen inches; Early Battersea twenty aches; Sugar Loaf two feet; Savoys two feet and a alf; and the Drum-head, Thousand-headed, Large

Iollow, Ox-cabbage, all four feet.

185. With regard to the time of sowing some more aght to be said; for, we are not here, as in England, onfined within four or five degrees of latitude. Here ome of us are living in fine, warm weather, while others is are living amidst snows. It will be better, there-re, in giving opinions about times, to speak of seasons, and not of months and days. The country people, in angland, go, to this day, many of them, at least, by the des; and, what is supremely ridiculous, they go, in ome cases, by the moveable tides. My gardener, at otley, very reluctantly obeyed me, one year, in sow-g green Kale when I ordered him to do it, because this untide was not come, and that, he said, was the coper season. "But," said I, "Robinson, Whitsuntide comes later this year than it did last year." "Later,

"Sir," said he, "how can that be?" "Because," said I, " it depends upon the moon when Whitsuntide "shall come." "The moon!" said he: "what sense "can there be in that?" "Nay," said I, "I am sure "I cannot tell. That is a matter far beyond my learn-"ing. Go and ask Mr. BAKER, the Parson, he ought " to be able to tell us; for he has a tenth part of our "garden stuff and fruit." The Quakers here cast all this rubbish away; and, one wonders how it can possibly be still cherished by any portion of an enlightened people. But, the truth is, that men do not think for themselves about these matters. Each succeeding generation tread in the steps of their fathers, whom they loved, honoured and obeyed. They take all upon trust. Gladly save themselves the trouble of thinking about things of not immediate interest. A desire to avoid the reproach of being irreligious induces them to practise an outward conformity. And thus have priest-craft with all its frauds, extortions, and immoralities, lived and flourished in defiance of reason and of nature.

186. However, as there are no farmers in America quite foolish enough to be ruled by the tides in sowing and reaping, I hurry back from this digression to say, that I cannot be expected to speak of precise times for doing any work, except as relates to the latitude in which I live, and in which my experiments have been made. I have cultivated a garden at Frederickton in the Province of New Brunswick, which is in latitude about forty-eight; and at Wilmington in Delaware State, which is in latitude about thirty-nine. In both these places I had as fine cabbages, turnips, and garden things of all the hardy sorts, as any man need wish to see. Indian Corn grew and ripened well in fields at Frederickton. And, of course, the summer was sufficient for the perfecting of all plants for cattle-food. And, how necessary is this food in Northern Climates! More to the Southward than Delaware State I have not been; but, in those countries the farmers have to pick and choose. They have two Long Island summers and falls, and three English, in every year.

187. According to these various circumstances men must form their judgment; but, it may be of some use

o state the length of time, which is required to bring each sort of cabbage to perfection. The following sorts are, it appears to me, all that can, in any case, be necessary. I have put against each nearly the time, that it will require to bring it to perfection, from the time of planting out in the places where the plants are to stand to come to perfection. The plants are supposed to be of a good size when put out, to have stood sufficiently thin in the seed-bed, and to have been kept clear from weeds in that bed. They are also supposed to go into ground well prepared.

188. It should be observed, that Savoys, which are so very rich in winter, are not so good, till they have been pinched by frost. I have put red cabbage down as a sort to be cultivated, because they are as good as the white of the same size, and because it may be convenient, in the farmer's family, to have some of them. The thousand-headed is of prodigious produce. You pull off the heads, of which it bears a great number at first, and others come; and so on for months, if the weather permit; so that this sort does not take five months to bring its first heads to perfection. When I say perfection, I mean quite hard; quite ripe. However, this is a coarse cabbage, and requires great room. The Ox-cabbage is coarser than the Drum-head. The Large hollow is a very fine cabbage; but it requires very good land. Some of all the sorts would be best; but, I hope, I have now given information enough to enable any one to form a judgment correct enough to begin with. Experience will be the best guide for the G 2

future. An ounce of each sort of seed would, perhaps, be enough; and the cost is, when compared with the

object, too trifling to be thought of.

189. Notwithstanding all that I have said, or can say, upon the subject of cabbages, I am very well aware, that the extension of the cultivation of them, in America, will be a work of time. A proposition to do any thing new, in so common a calling as agriculture, is looked at with suspicion; and by some, with feelings not of the kindest description; because it seems to imply an imputation of ignorance in those to whom the proposition is made. A little reflection will, however, suppress this feeling in men of sense; and, those who still entertain it may console themselves with the assurance, that no one will desire to compel them to have stores of green, or moist, cattle-food in winter. To be ashamed to be taught is one of the greatest of human follies; but, I must say, that it is a folly less prevalent in America than in any other country with which I am

acquainted.

190. Besides the disposition to reject novelties, this proposition of mine has books to contend against. I read, last fall, in an American Edition of the Encyclopædia Britannica, " greatly enlarged and improved," some observations on the culture of cabbages as cattlefood, which were well calculated to deter a reader of that book from attempting the culture. I do not recollect the words; but the substance was, that this plant could not be cultivated to advantage by the farmer IN AMERICA. This was the more provoking to me, as I had, at that moment, so fine a piece of cabbages in Long Island. If the American Editor of this work had given his readers the bare, unimproved, Scotch Edition, the reader would have there seen, that, in England and Scotland, they raise sixty-eight tons of cabbages (tons mind) upon an acre; and that the whole expense of an acre, exclusive of rent, is one pound fourteen shillings and a penny; or seven dollars and seventy-five cents. Say that the expense in America is double and the crop one half, or one fourth, if you like. Where are seventeen tons of green food in winter, or even in summer, to be got for sixteen dollars? Nay, where is that

quantity, of such a quality, to be got for fifty dollars? The Scotch Edition gives an account of fifty-four tons raised on an acre where the land was worth only twelve shillings (less than three dollars) an acre. In fairness then, the American Editor should have given to his agricultural readers what the Scotchman had said upon the subject. And, if he still thought it right to advise the American farmers not to think of cabbages, he should, I think, have offered them some, at least, of the reasons for his believing, that that which was obtained in such abundance in England and Scotland, was not to be obtained to any profit at all here. What! will not this immense region furnish a climate, for this purpose, equal even to Scotland, where an oat will hardly ripen; and where the crop of that miserable grain is sometimes harvested amidstice and snow! The proposition is, upon the face of it, an absurdity; and

my experience proves it to be false.

191. This book says, if I recollect rightly, that the culture has been tried, and has failed. Tried? How ried! That cabbages, and most beautiful cabbages will grow in all parts of America, every farmer knows; for he has them in his garden, or sees them, every year, n the gardens of others. And, if they will grow in garlens, why not in fields? Is there common sense in supposing, that they will not grow in a piece of land, pecause it is not called a garden? The Encyclopædia Britannica gives an account of twelve acres of cabbages, which would keep "forty-five oxen and sixty sheep for three months; improving them as much as the grass in the best months in the year (in England) May, June, and July." Of these large cabbages, being t four feet apart in the rows, one man will easily plant ut an acre in a day. As to the seed-bed, the labour f that is nothing, as we have seen. Why, then, are nen frightened at the labour? All but the mere act of lanting is performed by oxen or horses; and they ever complain of "the labour." The labour of an cre of cabbages is not half so much as that of an acre f Indian Corn. The bringing in of the crop and aplying it are not more expensive than those of the corn. and will any man pretend, that an acre of good cab

bages is not worth three times as much as a crop of good corn? Besides, if early cabbages, they are off and leave the land for transplanted Swedish Turnips, for Late Cabbages, or for Buck-wheat; and, if late cabbages, they come after early ones, after wheat, rye, oats, or barley. This is what takes place even in England, where the fall is so much shorter, as to growing weather, than it is in Long Island, and, of course, all the way to Georgia. More to the North, in the latitude of Boston, for instance, two crops of early cabbages will come upon the same ground; or a crop of early cabbages will follow any sort of grain, except Buck-wheat.

192. In concluding this Chapter I cannot help strongly recommending farmers who may be disposed to try this culture, to try it fairly. That is to say, to employ true seed, good land, and due care; for, as " men do "not gather grapes from thorns, nor figs from thistles," so they do not harvest cabbages from stems of rape. Then, as to the land, it must be made good and rich, if it be not in that state already; for a cabbage will not be fine, where a white turnip will; but as the quantity of land, wanted for this purpose, is comparatively very small, the land may easily be made rich. The after-culture of cabbages is trifling. No weeds to plague us with hand-work. Two good ploughings, at most, will suffice. But ploughing after planting out is necessary; and, besides, it leaves the ground in so fine a state. The trial may be on a small scale, if the farmer please, Perhaps it were best to be such. But, on whatever scale, let the trial be a fair trial.

193. I shall speak again of the use of cabbages, when

I come to speak of Hogs and Cows.

not, more expensive than those of the corn,

CHAP. IV.

EARTH-BURNING, 1818:

194. In paragraphs 99, 100, and 101, I spoke of a mode of procuring manure by the burning of earth, and I proposed to try it this present year. This I have now done, and I proceed to give an account of the result.

195. I have tried the efficacy of this manure on Cabbages, Swedish Turnips, Indian Corn, and Buckwheat. In the three former cases the Ashes were put into the furrow and the earth was turned over them, in the same way that I have described, in paragraph 177, with regard to the manure for Savoys. I put at the rate of about twenty tons weight to an acre. In the case of the Buck-wheat, the Ashes were spread out of the wagon upon a little strip of land on the out-side of the piece. They were thickly spread; and it might be that the proportion exceeded even thirty tons to the acre. But, upon the part where the ashes were spread, the Buck-wheat was three or four times as good as upon the land adjoining. The land was very poor. It bore Buck-wheat last year, without any manure. It had two good ploughings then, and it had two good ploughings again this year, but had no manure, except the part above-mentioned and one other part at a great distance from it. So that the trial was very fair indeed.

effect; and I am now quite certain that any crop may be raised with the help of this manure; that is to say, any sort of crop; for, of dung, wood-ashes, and earth-ashes, when all are ready upon the spot, without purchase or carting from a distance, the two former are certainly to be employed in preference to the latter, because a smaller quantity of them will produce the same effect, and, of course, the application of them is less expensive. But, in taking to a farm unprovided

with the two former; or under circumstances which make it profitable to add to the land under cultivation, what can be so convenient, what so cheap, as ashes

procured in this way?

197. A near neighbour of mine, Mr. DAYREA, sowed a piece of Swedish Turnips, broad-cast, in June, this year. The piece was near a wood, and there was a great quantity of clods of a grassy description. These he burnt into ashes, which ashes he spread over one half of the piece, while he put soaper's ashes over the other part of the piece. I saw the turnips in October; and there was no visible difference in the two parts, whether as to the vigourousness of the plants or the bulk of the turnips. They were sown broad-cast, and stood unevenly upon the ground. They were harvested a month ago (it is now 26th November), which was a month too early. They would have been a third, at least, more in bulk, and much better in quality, if they had remained in the ground until now. The piece was 70 paces long and 7 paces wide; and, the reader will find, that, as the piece produced forty bushels, this was at the rate of four hundred bushels to the acre.

198. What quantity of earth-ashes were spread on this piece it is impossible to ascertain with precision; but, I shall suppose the quantity to have been very large indeed in proportion to the surface of the land. Let it be four times the quantity of the soaper's ashes. Still, the one was made upon the spot, at, perhaps, a tenth part of the cost of the other; and, as such ashes can be made upon any farm, there can be no reason for not trying the thing, at any rate, and which trying may be effected upon so small a scale as not to exceed in expense a half of a dollar. I presume, that many farmers will try this method of obtaining manure; and, therefore, I will describe how the burning is

effected.

199. There are two ways of producing ashes from earth: the one in heaps upon the ground, and the other within walls of turf, or earth. The first, indeed, is the burning of turf, or peat. But, let us see how it is done.

200. The surface of the land is taken off to a depth

of two or three inches, and turned the earth side uppermost to dry. The land, of course, is covered with grass, or heath, or something the roots of which hold it together, and which makes the part taken off take the name of turf. In England, this operation is performed with a turf-cutter, and by hand. The turfs are then taken, or a part of them, at least, and placed on their edges, leaning against each other, like the two sides of the roof of a house. In this state they remain, till they are dry enough to burn. Then the burning is begun in this way. A little straw and some dry sticks, or any thing that will make a trifling fire, is lighted. Some little bits of the turf are put to this. When the turf is on fire, more bits are carefully put round against the openings whence the smoke issues. In the course of a day or two the heap grows large. The burning keeps working on the inside, though there never appears any blaze. Thus the field is studded with heaps. After the first fire is got to be of considerable bulk, no straw is wanted for other heaps, because a good shovel full of fire can be carried to light other heaps; and so, until all the heaps are lighted. Then the workman goes from heap to heap, and carries the turf to all, by degrees, putting some to each heap every day or two, until all the field be burnt. He takes care to keep in the smoke as much as possible. When all the turf is put on, the field is left, and, in a week or two, whether it rain or not, the heaps are ashes instead of earth. The ashes are afterwards spread upon the ground; the ground is ploughed and sowed; and this is regarded as the very best preparation for a crop of turnips.

201. This is called "paring and burning." It was introduced into England by the Romans, and it is strongly recommended in the First Georgic of Virgil, in, as Mr. Tull shows, very fine poetry, very bad philosophy, and still worse logic. It gives three or four crops upon even poor land; but, it ruins the land for an age. Hence it is, that tenants, in England, are, in many cases, restrained from paring and burning, especially towards the close of their leases. It is the Roman busbandry, which has always been followed, until within a century, by the French and English.

G 5

It is implicitly followed in France to this day; as it is by the great mass of common farmers in England. All the foolish country sayings about Friday being an unlucky day to begin any thing fresh upon; about the noise of Geese foreboding bad weather; about the signs of the stars; about the influence of the moon on animals: these, and scores of others, equally ridiculous and equally injurious to true philosophy and religion, came from the Romans, and are inculcated in those books, which pedants call "classical," and which are taught to "young gentlemen" at the universities and in academies. Hence, too, the foolish notions of sailors about Friday, which notions very often retard the operations of commerce. I have known many a farmer, when his wheat was dead ripe, put off the beginning of harvest from Thursday to Saturday, in order to avoid Friday. The stars saves hundreds of thousands of lambs and pigs from sexual degradation at so early an age as the operation would otherwise be performed upon them. These heathen notions still prevail even in America as far as relates to this matter. A neighbour of mine in Long Island, who was to operate on some pigs and lambs for me, begged me to put the thing off for a while; for that the Almanac told him, that the signs were, just then, as unfavourable as possible. I begged him to proceed, for that I set all stars at defiance. He very kindly complied, and had the pleasure to see, that every pig and lamb did well. He was surprised when I told him, that this mysterious matter was not only a bit of priest-craft, but of heathen priest-craft, cherished by priests of a more modern date, because it tended to bewilder the senses and to keep the human mind in subjection. "What a thing it is, Mr. Wiggins," said I, "that a cheat practised upon the pagans of Italy, "two or three thousand years ago, should, by almanac-" makers, be practised on a sensible farmer in America!" If priests, instead of preaching so much about mysteries, were to explain to their hearers, the origin of cheats like this, one might be ready to allow, that the wages paid to them were not wholly thrown away.

202. I make no apology for this digression; for, if it have a tendency to set the minds of only a few per-

sons on the tract of detecting the cheatery of priests, the room which it occupies will have been well bestowed.

203. To return to paring and burning; the reader will see with what ease it might be done in America, where the sun would do more than half the work. Besides the paring might be done with the plough. A sharp shear, going shallow, could do the thing perfectly well. Cutting across would make the sward into turfs.

204. So much for paring and burning. But, what I recommend is, not to burn the land which is to be cultivated, but other earth, for the purpose of getting ashes to be brought on the land. And this operation, I perform thus: I make a circle, or an oblong square. I cut sods and build a wall all round, three feet thick and four feet high. I then light a fire in the middle with straw, dry sticks, boughs, or such like matter. I go on making this fire larger and larger till it extends over the whole of the bottom of the pit, or kiln. I put on roots of trees or any rubbish wood, till there be a good thickness of strong coals. I then put on the driest of the clods that I have ploughed up round about so as to cover all the fire over. The earth thus put in will burn. You will see the smoke coming out at little places here and there. Put more clods wherever the smoke appears. Keep on thus for a day or two. By this time a great mass of fire will be in the inside. And now you may dig out the clay, or earth, any where round the kiln, and fling it on without ceremony, always taking care to keep in the smoke; for, if you suffer that to continue coming out at any one place, a hole will soon be made; the main force of the fire will draw to that hole; a blaze, like that of a volcano will come out, and the fire will be extinguished.

205. A very good way, is, to put your finger into the top of the heap here and there; and if you find the fire very near, throw on more earth. Not too much at a time; for that weighs too heavily on the fire, and keeps it back; and, at first, will put it partially out. You keep on thus augmenting the kiln, till you get to the top of the walls, and then you may, if you lik

raise the walls, and still go on. No rain will affect the

fire when once it is become strong.

206. The principle is to keep out air, whether at the top or the sides, and this you are sure to do, if you keep in the smoke. I burnt, this last summer, about thirty wagon loads in one round kiln, and never saw the smoke at all after the first four days. I put in my finger to try whether the fire was near the top; and when I found it approaching, I put on more earth.

Never was a kiln more completely burnt.

207. Now, this may be done on the skirt of any wood, where the matters are all at hand. This mode is far preferable to the above-ground burning in heaps. Because, in the first place, there the materials must be turf, and dry turf; and, in the next place, the smoke escapes there, which is the finest part of burnt matter. Soot, we know well, is more powerful than ashes; and soot is composed of the grossest part of the smoke. That which flies out of the chimney is

the best part of all.

the fire, the fire may be lighted precisely as in the case of paring and burning. If the kiln be large, the oblong square is the best figure. About ten feet wide, because then a man can fling the earth easily over every part. The mode they pursue in England, where there is no wood, is to make a sort of building in the kiln with turfs, and leave air-holes at the corners of the walls, till the fire be well begun. But this is tedious work; and, in this country wholly unnecessary. Care must, however, be taken, that the fire be well lighted. The matter put in at first should be such as is of the lightest description; so that a body of earth on fire may be obtained, before it be too heavily loaded.

209. The burning being completed, having got the quantity you want, let the kiln remain. The fire will continue to work, 'till all is ashes. If you want to use the ashes sooner, open the kiln. They will be cold

enough to remove in a week.

210. Some persons have peat, or bog earth. This may be burnt like common earth, in kilns, or dry, as in the paring and burning method. Only, the peat should

be cut out in the shape of bricks, as much longer and bigger as you find convenient, and set up to dry, in the same way that bricks are set up to dry previous to the burning. This is the only fuel for houses in some parts of England. I myself was nursed and brought up without ever seeing any other sort of fire. The ashes used, in those times, to be sold for four pence sterling a bushel, and were frequently carried, after the purchase, to a distance of ten miles, or more: At this time, in my own neighbourhood, in Hampshire, peat is burnt in large quantities for the ashes, which are sold, I believe, as high as sixpence sterling a bushel, and carried to a distance even of twenty miles in some cases.

211. Nevertheless, it is certain, that these ashes are not equally potent upon every sort of soil. We do not use them much at Botley, though upon the spot. They are carried away to the higher and poorer lands, where they are sown by hand upon clover and sain-foin. An excellent farmer, in this Island, assures me, that he has tried them in various ways, and never found them to have effect. So say the farmers near Botley. But, there is no harm in making a trial. It is done with a mere nothing of expense. A yard square in a garden

is quite sufficient for the experiment.

212. With respect to earth-ashes, burnt in kilns, heeping in the smoke, I have proved their great good effect; but, still, I would recommend trying them upon a small scale. However, let it be borne in mind, that the proportion to the acre ought to be large. Thirty good tons to an acre; and why may it not be such, seeing that the expense is so trifling?

CHAP. V.

TRANSPLANTING INDIAN CORN.

213. I was always of opinion, that this would be the best mode, under certain circumstances, of dealing with this crop. The spring, in this part of America, and further to the North, is but short. It is nearly winter 'till it is summer. The labours of the year are, at this season, very much crowded. To plant the grains of the Indian Corn over a whole field requires previous ploughing, harrowing, marking, and manuring. The consequence is, that, as there are so many other things to do, something is but too often badly done.

214. Now, if this work of Corn planting could be postponed to the 25th of June (for this Island) instead of being performed on, or about the 15th of May, how well the ground might be prepared by the 25th of June! This can be done only by transplanting the plants of the Corn. I was resolved to try this; and so confident was I that it would succeed, that I had made some part

of my preparations for six acres.

215. I sowed the seed at about three inches apart, in beds, on the 20th of May. The plants stood in the beds (about 15 perches of ground) till the first of July. They were now two feet and a half high; and I was ready to begin planting out. The weather had been dry in the extreme. Not a drop of rain for nearly a month. My land was poor, but clean; and I ought to have proceeded to do the job at once. My principal man had heard so much in ridicule of the project, that he was constantly begging and praying me not to persevere. "Every body said it was impossible for the "Corn to live!" However, I began. I ploughed a part of the field into four-feet ridges, and, one evening, set on, thus: I put a good quantity of earth-ashes in the deep furrow between the ridges, then turned back the

earth over them, and then planted the Corn on the ridge, at a foot apart. We pulled up the plants without ceremony, cut off their roots to half an inch long, cut off their leaves about eight inches down from their points, and, with a long setting stick, stuck them about seven inches into the ground down amongst the fresh mould and ashes.

216. This was on the first of July in the evening; and, not willing to be laughed at too much, I thought I would pause two or three days; for, really, the sun seemed as if it would burn up the very earth. At the close of the second day, news was brought me, that the Corn was all dead. I went out and looked at it, and though I saw that it was not dead, I suffered the everlasting gloomy peal that my people rang in my ears to extort from me my consent to the pulling up of the rest of the plants and throwing them away; consent which was acted upon with such joy, alacrity, and zeal, that the whole lot were lying under the garden fence in a few minutes. My man intended to give them to the oxen, from the charitable desire, I suppose, of annihilating this proof of his master's folly. He would have pulled up the two rows which we had transplanted; but, I would not consent to that; for, I was resolved, that they should have a week's trial. At the end of the week I went out and looked at them. I slipped out at a time when no one was likely to see me! At a hundred yards distance the plants looked like so many little Corn stalks in November; but, at twenty yards, I saw that all was right, and I began to reproach myself for having suffered my mind to be thwarted in its purpose by opinions opposed to principles. I saw, that the plants were all alive, and had begun to shoot in the heart. I did not stop a minute. I hastened back to the garden to see whether any of the plants, which lay in heaps, were yet alive.

217. Now, mind, the plants were put out on the first of July; the 15 succeeding days were not only dry, but the very hottest of this gloriously hot summer. The plants that had been flung away were, indeed, nearly all dead; but, some, which lay at the bottoms of the heaps, were not only alive, but had shot their roots into

the ground. I resolved to plant out two rows of these, even these. While I was at it Mr. Judge Mitchell called upon me. He laughed at us very heartily. This was on the 8th of July. I challenged him to take him three to one my two rows against any two rows of his corn of equal length; and he is an excellent farmer on excellent land. "Then," said I, "if you are afraid to

"back your opinion, I do not mind your laugh."

218. On the 27th of August Mr. Judge Mitchell and his brother the justly celebrated Doctor Mitchell did me the honour to call here. I was gone to the mill; but they saw the Corn. The next day I had the pleasure to meet Doctor Mitchell, for the first time, at his brother's; and a very great pleasure it was; for a man more full of knowledge and apparently less conscious of it, I never saw in my life. But, the Corn: "What do you think of my Corn now?" I asked Mr. Mitchell, whether he did not think I should have won the wager. "Why, I do not know, indeed," said he,

" as to the two first planted rows."

219. On the 10th of September, Mr. Judge Law-RENCE, in company with a young gentleman, saw the Corn. He examined the ears. Said that they were well-filled, and the grains large. He made some calculations as to the amount of the crop. I think he agreed with me, that it would be at the rate of about forty bushels to the acre. All that now remained was to harvest the Corn, in a few weeks' time, to shell, to weigh it; and to obtain a couple of rows of equal length of every neighbour surrounding me; and then, make the comparison, the triumphant result of which I anticipated with so much certainty, that my impatience for the harvest exceeded in degree the heat of the weather, though that continued broiling hot. That very night! the night following the day when Mr. JUDGE LAWRENCE saw the Corn, eight or nine steers and heifers leaped, or broke, into my pasture from the road, kindly poked down the fence of the field to take with them four oxen of my own which had their heads tied down, and in they all went just upon the transplanted Corn, of which they left neither ear nor stem, except about two bushels of ears which they had, in their haste, trampled under

foot! What a mortification! Half an acre of fine cabbages nearly destroyed by the biting a hole in the hearts of a great part of them; turnips torn up and trampled about; a scene of destruction and waste, which, at another time, would have made me stamp and rave (if not swear) like a mad-man, seemed now nothing at all. The Corn was such a blow, that nothing else was felt. I was, too, both hand-tied and tongue-tied. I had nothing to wreak my vengeance on. In the case of the Boroughmongers I can repay blow with blow, and, as they have already felt, with interest and compound interest. But, there was no human being that I could blame; and, as to the depredators themselves, though in this instance, their conduct did seem worthy of another being, whom priests have chosen to furnish with horns as well as tail, what was I to do against them? In short, I had, for once in my life, to submit peaceably and quietly, and to content myself with a firm resolution never to plant, or sow, again, without the protection of a fence, which an ox cannot get over and which a pig cannot go under.

220. This Corn had every disadvantage to contend with: poor land; no manure but earth-ashes burnt out of that same land; planted in dry earth; planted in dry and hot weather; no rain to enter two inches, until the 8th of August, nine and thirty days after the transplanting; and yet, every plant had one good perfect ear, and, besides, a small ear to each plant; and some of the plants had three ears, two perfect and one imperfect. Even the two last-planted rows, though they were not so good, were not bad. My opinion is, that their produce would have been at the rate of 25 bushels to the acre;

and this is not a bad crop of Corn.

221. For my part, if I should cultivate Corn again, I shall transplant it to a certainty. Ten days earlier, perhaps; but I shall certainly transplant what I grow. I know, that the labour will be less, and I believe that the crop will be far greater. No dropping the seed; no hand-hoeing; no patching after the cut-worm, or brown grub; no suckers; no grass and weeds; no stifling; every plant has its proper space; all is clean; and one good deep ploughing, or two at most, leaves the

ground as clean as a garden; that is to say, as a garden ought to be. The sowing of the seed in beds is one day's work (for ten acres) for one man. Hoeing the young plants, another day. Transplanting, four dollars an acre to the very outside. "But where are the hands to come from to do the transplanting?" One would think, that, to hear this question so often repeated, the people in America were like the Rhodian Militia, described in the beautiful poem of Dryden, "mouths without hands." Far, however, is this from being the case; or else, where would the hands come from to do the marking; the dropping and covering of the Corn; the hand-hoing of it, sometimes twice; the patching, after the grubs; the suckering when that work is done, as it always ought to be? Put the plague and expenses o all these operations together, and you will, I believe, find them to exceed four, or even six, dollars an acre, if they be all well done, and the Corn kept perfectly clean.

222. The transplanting of ten acres of Corn cannot be done all in one day by two or three men; nor is it at all necessary that it should. It may be done within the space of twelve or fourteen days. Little boys and girls, very small, will carry the plants, and if the farmer will but try, he will stick in an acre a day himself; for, observe, nothing is so easily done. There is no fear of dearth. The plants, in soft ground, might almost be poked down like so many sticks. I did not try it; but, I am pretty sure, that the roots might be cut all off close, so that the stump were left entire. For, mind, a fibre, of a stout thing, never grows again after removal. New ones must come out of new roots too, or the plant, whether corn or tree, will die. When some people plant trees, they are so careful not to cut off the little hairy fibres; for these, they think, will catch hold of the ground immediately. If, when they have planted in the fall, they were to open the ground in June the next year, what would be their surprize to find all the hairy fibres in a mouldy state, and the new small roots shot out of the big roots of the tree, and no new fibres at all yet? for, these come out of the new small roots! It is the same with every sort of plant, except of a very small size and very quickly moved from earth to earth.

223. If any one choose to try this method of cultivating Corn, let him bear in mind, that the plants ought to be strong, and nearly two feet high. The leaves should be shortened by all means; for, they must perish at the tops before the new flow of sap can reach them. I have heard people say, that they have tried transplanting Corn very often, but have never found it to answer. But how have they tried it? Why, when the grub has destroyed a hill, they have taken from other hills the superabundant plants and filled up the vacancy. In the first place, they have done this when the plants were small: that is not my plan. Then they have put the plants in stale hard ground: that is not my plan. Then they have put them into ground where prosperous neighbours had the start of them: that is not my plan. I am not at all surprised, that they have not found their plan to answer; but, that is no reason that mine should not answer. The best way will be to try three rows in any field, and see which method requires the least labour and produces the largest crop.

224. At any rate, the facts, which I have stated upon this subject are curious in themselves; they are useful, as they show what we may venture to do in the removing of plants; and they show most clearly how unfounded are the fears of those, who imagine, that Corn is injured by ploughing between it and breaking its roots. My plants owed their vigour and their fruit to their removal into fresh pasture; and, the oftener the land is ploughed between growing crops of any sort (allowing the roots to shoot between the ploughings) the better it is. I remember that LORD RANELAGH showed me in 1806, in his garden at Fulham, a peach tree, which he had removed in full bloom, and that must

have been in March, and which bore a good crop of fine fruit the same year. If a tree can be thus dealt

served had meresany it wile to fai the plant freely time

the product; and, as the planter is strictly charged to die this, he is and to pay little assertion to the menus by

which the object is acressofished. The things is done

with, why need we fear to transplant such things as Indian Corn?

CHAP. VI.

SWEDISH TURNIPS.

225. Upon this subject I have no great deal to add to what was said in Part I. Chap. II. There are a few things, however, that I omitted to mention, which I will mention here.

226. I sow my seed by hand. All machinery is imperfect for this purpose. The wheel of the drill meets with a sudden check; it jumps; the holes are stopped; a clogging or an improper impelling takes place; a gap is produced, and it can never be put to rights; and, after all, the sowing upon four-feet rigdes is very nearly as quickly performed by hand. I make the drills, or channels, to sow the seed in by means of a light roller, which is drawn by a horse, which rolls two ridges at a time, and which has two markers following the roller, making a drill upon the top of each ridge. This saves time; but, if the hand do the whole, a man will draw the drills, sow the seed, and cover an acre in a day with ease.

227. The only mischief in this case, is, that of sowing too thick; and this arises from the seed being so nearly of the colour of the earth. To guard against this evil, I this year adopted a method which succeeded perfectly. I wetted the seed with water a little, I then put some whitening to it, and by rubbing them well together, the seed became white instead of brown; so that the man when sowing, could see what he was about.

228. In my directions for transplanting turnips I omitted to mention one very important thing; the care to be taken not to bury the heart of the plant. I observed how necessary it was to fix the plant firmly in the ground; and, as the planter is strictly charged to do this, he is apt to pay little attention to the means by which the object is accomplished. The thing is done

easily enough, if you cram the butts of the leaves down below the surface. But, this brings the earth, with the first rain at least, over the heart of the plant; and then it will never grow at all: it will just live; but will never increase in size one single jot. Care, therefore, must be taken of this. The fixing is to be effected by the stick being applied to the point of the root; as mentioned in paragraph 85. Not to fix the plant is a great fault; but to bury the heart is a much greater; for, if

this be done the plant is sure to die.

229. My own crop of Swedish Turnips this year is far inferior to that of last in every respect. The season has been singularly unfavourable to all green and root crops. The grass has been barer than it was, I believe, ever known to be; and, of course, other vegetables have experienced a similar fate. Yet, I have some very good turnips; and, even with such a season, they are worth more than three times what a crop of Corn on the same land would have been. I am now (25th Nov.) giving the greens to my cow and hogs. A cow and forty stout hogs eat the greens of about twenty or thirty rods of turnips in a day. My five acres of greens will last about 25 days. I give no corn or grain of any sort to these hogs, and my English hogs are quite fat enough for fresh pork. I have about 25 more pigs to join these forty in a month's time: about 40 more will join those before April. My cabbages on an acre and a half of ground will carry me well on till February (unless I send my savoys to New York), and, when the cabbages are done, I have my Swedish Turnips for March, April, May and June, with a great many to sell if I choose. I have, besides, a dozen ewes to keep on the same food, with a few wethers and lambs for my house. In June Early Cabbages come in; and then the hogs feed on them. Thus the year is brought round.

230. But, what pleases me most, as to the Swedish Turnips, is, that several of my neighbours have tried the culture, and have far surpassed me in it this year. Their land is better than mine, and they have had no Borough-villains and Bank-villains to fight against. Since my Turnips were sown, I have written great part

of a Grammar and have sent twenty Registers to England, besides writing letters amounting to a reasonable volume in bulk; the whole of which has made an average of nine pages of common print a day, Sundays included. And, besides this, I have been twelve days from home, on business, and about five on visits. Now, whatever may have been the quality of the writings; whether they demanded mind or not, is no matter: they demanded time for the fingers to move in, and yet, I have not written a hundred pages by candle-light. A man knows not what he can do 'till he tries. But, then, mind, I have always been up with the cocks and hens; and I have drunk nothing but milk and water. It is a saying, that " wine inspires wit;" and that " in wine "there is truth." These sayings are the apologies of drinkers. Every thing that produces intoxication, though in but the slightest degree, is injurious to the mind; whether it be such to the body or not, is a matter of far less consequence. My Letter to Mr. TIERNEY, on the state of the Paper-Money, has, I find, produced a great and general impression in England. The subject was of great importance, and the treating it involved much of that sort of reasoning which is the most difficult of execution. That Letter, consisting of thirtytwo full pages of print, I wrote in one day, and that, too, on the 11th of July, the hottest day in the year. But, I never could have done this, if I had been guzzling wine, or grog, or beer, or cider all the day. I hope the reader will excuse this digression; and, for my own part, I think nothing of the charge of egotism, if, by indulging in it, I produce a proof of the excellent effects of sobriety. It is not drunkenness that I cry out against: that is beastly, and beneath my notice. It is drinking; for a man may be a great drinker, and vet no drunkard. He may accustom himself to swallow, 'till his belly is a sort of tub. The Spaniards, who are a very sober people, call such a man "a wine " bag," it being the custom in that country to put wine into bags, made of skins or hides. And indeed, wine bag or grog bag or beer bag is the suitable appellation.

231. To return to the Swedish Turnips, it was impossible for me to attend to them in person at all; for,

if I once got out, I should have kept out. I was very anxious about them; but much more anxious about my duty to my countrymen, who have remained so firmly attached to me, and in whose feelings and views, as to public matters, I so fully participate. I left my men to do their best, and, considering the season, they did very well. I have observed before, that I never saw my Savoys 'till two months after they were planted out in the field, and I never saw some of my Swedish Tur-

nips 'till within these fifteen days.

232. But, as I said before, some of my neighbours have made the experiment with great success. I mentioned Mr. Dayrea's crop before, at paragraph 197. Mr. HART, at South Hampstead, has a fine piece, as my son informs me. His account is, that the field looked, in October, as fine as any that he ever saw in England. Mr. JUDGE MITCHELL has a small field that were, when I saw them, as fine as any that I ever saw in my life. He had transplanted some in the driest and hottest weather; and they were exceedingly fine, notwithstanding the singular untowardness of the season.

233. Mr. James Byrd of Flushing, has, however, done the thing upon the largest scale. He sowed, in June, about two acres and a half upon ridges thirty inches apart. They were very fine; and, in September, their leaves met across the intervals. On the 21st of September I saw them for the second time. The field was one body of beautiful green. The weather still very dry. I advised Mr. Byrd to plough between them by all means; for the roots had met long before across the interval. He observed, that the horse would trample on the leaves. I said, " never mind: " the good done by the plough will be ten times greater "than the injury done by the breaking of leaves." He said, that, great as his fears were, he would follow my advice. I saw the turnips again on the 8th of October, when I found that he had begun the ploughing; but, that the horse made such havock among the leaves and his workmen made such clamorous remonstrances, that, after doing a little piece, Mr. Byrd desisted. These were reasons wholly insufficient to satisfy me; and at

the latter, the remonstrances of a workman, I should have ridiculed, without a grain of mercy, only I recollected, that my men had remonstrated me (partly with sorrowful looks and shakes of the head) out of my de-

sign to transplant six acres of Indian Corn.

234. Mr. Byrd's crop was about 350 bushels to an acre. I was at his house on the 23rd of this month (November); and there I heard two things from him which I communicate with great pleasure. The first was, that, from the time he began taking up his turnips, he began feeding his cows upon the greens; and, that this doubled the quantity of their milk. That the greens might last as long as possible, he put them in small heaps, that they might not heat. He took up his turnips, however, nearly a month too early. They grow till the hard frosts come. The greens are not so good till they have had some little frost; and, the bulb should be ripe. I have been now (27th Nov.) about ten days cutting off my greens. The bulbs I shall take up in about ten days hence. Those that are not consumed by that time, I shall put in small heaps in the field, and bring them away as they may be wanted.

pleased me very much indeed; not only on account of its being a complete confirmation of a great principle of Tull applied to land in this climate, but on account also of the candour of Mr. Byrd, who, when he had seen the result, said, "I was wrong, friend Cobbett, in not following thy advice." And then he went on to tell me, that the turnips in the piece which he had ploughed after the 21st of September were a crop a fourth part greater than those adjoining them, which remained unploughed. Thus, then, let no one be afraid of breaking the pretty leaves that look so gay; and, how false, then must be the notion, that to plough Indian Corn in dry weather, or late, is injurious! Why should it not be as beneficial to Corn as to Turnips and Cabbages!

236. Mr. Byrd transplanted with his superabundant plants, about two acres and a half. These he had not taken up on the 23rd of November. They were not so fine as the others, owing, in part, to the hearts of many having been buried, and to the whole having been

put too deep into the ground. But, the ridges of both fields were too close together. Four feet is the distance. You cannot plough clean and deep within a smaller space without throwing the earth over the plants. But, as bulk of crop is the object, it is very hard to persuade people, that two rows are not better than one. Mr. Judge Mitchell is a true disciple of the Tullian System. His rows were four feet asunder; his ridges high; all according to rule. If I should be able to see his crop, or him, before this volume goes to press, I will give some account of the result of his labour.

237. This year has shown me, that America is not wholly exempt from that mortal enemy of turnips, the fly, which mawled some of mine, and which carried off a whole piece for Mr. Judge Lawrence at Bay-side. Mr. Byrd says, that he thinks, that to soak the seed in fish-oil is of use as a protection. It is very easy to try it; but, the best security is, pretty early sowing thick, and transplanting. However, this has been a singular year; and, even this year, the ravages of the fly have been,

generally speaking, but trifling.

238. Another enemy has, too, made his appearance: the caterpillar; which came about the tenth of October. These eat the leaves; and, sometimes, they will, as in England, eat all up, if left alone. In Mr. Byrd's field, hey were proceeding on pretty rapidly, and, therefore, ne took up his turnips earlier than he would have done. Wide rows are a great protection against these sinecure ventry of the fields. They attacked me on the outside of a piece joining some buck-wheat, where they had been bred. When the buck-wheat was cut, they salied out upon the turnips, and, like the spawn of real Boroughmongers, they, after eating all the leaves of he first row, went on to the second, and were thus proeeding to devour the whole. I went with my plough, loughed a deep furrow from the rows of turnips, as ar as the caterpillars had gone. Just shook the plants and gave the top of the ridge a bit of a sweep with a ttle broom. Then buried them alive, by turning the arrows back. Oh; that the people of England could eat the Borough-villians and their swarms in the same

way! Then might they hear without envy of the easy

and happy lives of American farmers!

239. A good sharp frost is the only complete doctor for this complaint; but, wide rows and ploughing will do much, where the attack is made in line, as in my case. Sometimes, however, the enemy starts up, here and there, all over the field; and then you must plough the whole field, or be content with turnips without greens, and with a diminished crop of turnips into the bargain. Mr. Byrd told me, that the caterpillars did not attack the part of the field which he ploughed after the 21st of September with nearly so much fury as they attacked the rest of the field! To be sure; for, the turnip leaves there, having received fresh vigour from the ploughing, were of a taste more acrid; and, you always see, that insects and reptiles, that feed on leaves and bark, choose the most sickly or feeble plants to begin upon, because the juices in them are sweeter. So that here is another reason, and not a weak one,

for deep and late ploughing.

240. I shall speak again of Swedish turnips when I come to treat of hogs; but, I will here add a few remarks on the subject of preserving the roots. In paragraph 106, I described the manner in which I stacked my turnips last year. That did very well. But, I will not, this year, make any hole in the ground, I will pile up about thirty bushels upon the level ground, in a pyramidical form, and then, to keep the earth from running amongst them, put over a little straw, or leaves of trees, and about four or five inches of earth over the whole. For, mind, the object is not to prevent freezing. The turnips will freeze as hard as stones. But so that they do not see the sun or the light, till they are thawed, it is no matter. This is the case even with apples. I preserved white turnips this way last year Keep the light out, and all will be safe with every root that I know any thing of, except that miserable thing the potatoe, which, consisting of earth, of a small portion of flour, and of water unmixed with sugar, will freeze to perdition, if it freeze at all. Mind, it is no matter to the animals, whether the Swedish turnip, the

white turnip, or the cabbage, be frozen, or not, at the time when they eat them. They are just as good; and are as greedily eaten. Otherwise, how would our sheep in England fatten on turnips (even white turnips) in the open fields and amidst snows and hard frosts? But, a potatoe, let the frost once touch it, and it is wet dirt.

241. I am of opinion, that if there were no earth put over the turnip heaps, or stacks, it would be better; and, it would be much more convenient. I shall venture it for a part of my crop; and I would recommend others to try it. The Northern Winter is, therefore, no objection to the raising of any of these crops; and, indeed, the crops are far more necessary there than to the Southward, because the Northern Winter is so much longer than the Southern. Let the snows (even the Nova Scotia snows) come. There are the crops safe. Ten minutes brings in a wagon load at any time in

winter, and the rest remain safe till spring.

242. I have been asked how I would manage the Swedish turnips, so as to keep them 'till June or July. In April (for Long Island); that is to say, when the roots begin to shoot out greens, or, as they will be, yellows, when hidden from the light. Let me stop here a moment, to make a remark which this circumstance has suggested. I have said before, that if you keep the bulbs from the light, they will freeze and thaw without the least injury. I was able to give no reason for this; and who can give a reason for leaves being yellow if they grow in the dark, and green, if they grow in the light? It is not the sun (except as the source of light) that makes the green; for any plant that grows in constant shade will be green; while one that grows in the dark will be yellow. When my son, James, was about three years old, LORD COCHRANE, lying against a green bank in the garden with him, had asked him many questions about the sky, and the river, and the sun and the moon, in order to learn what were the notions, as to those objects, in the mind of a child. James grew tired, for as Rousseau, in his admirable exposure of the folly of teaching by question and answer, observes, nobody likes to be questioned, and especially children. "Well,"

H 2

said James, "now you tell me something: what is it that makes the grass green?" His Lordship told him it was the sun. "Why," said James, pulling up some grass, "you see it is white down here." "Aye," replied my Lord, "but that is because the sun cannot get at it." "How get at it?" said James: "The sun makes it hot all the way down." LORD COCHRANE came in to me, very much delighted: "Here," said he, " little Jemmy has started a fine subject of dispute for " all the philosophers." If this page should have the honour to meet the eye of LORD COCHRANE, it will remind him of one of the many happy hours that we have passed together, and I beg him to regard any mention of the incident as a mark of that love and respect which I bear towards him, and of the ardent desire I constantly have to see him avenged on all vile, cowardly, perjured and infamous persecutors.

243. When any one has told me, what it is that makes "grass green," I shall be able to tell him what it is that makes darkness preserve turnips; and, in the meanwhile, I am quite content with a perfect knowledge of

the effects.

244. So far for the preservation while winter lasts; but, then, how to manage the roots when spring comes? Take the turnips out of the heaps; spread them upon the ground round about, or any where else in the sun. Let them get perfectly dry. If they lie a month in sun and rain alternately, it does not signify. They will take no injury. Throw them on a barn's floor; throw them into a shed; put them any where out of the way; only do not put them in thick heaps; for then they will heat, perhaps, and grow a little. I believe they may be kept the whole year perfectly sound and good; but, at any rate, I kept them thus, last year, 'till July.

245. Of saving seed I have some little to say. I saved some, in order to see whether it degenerated; but, having, before the seed was ripe, had such complete proof of the degeneracy of cabbage seed; having been assured by Mr. William Smith, of Great Neck, that the Swedish turnip seed had degenerated with him to a long whitish root; and, having, besides, seen the long, pale looking things in New York Market in June; I

took no care of what I had growing, being sure of the real sort from England. However, Mr. Byrd's were from his own seed, which he has saved for several years. They differ from mine. They are longer in proportion to their circumference. The leaf is rather more pointed, and the inside of the bulb is not of so deep a yellow. Some of Mr. Byrd's have a little hole towards the crown, and the flesh is spotted with white where the green is cut off. He ascribes these defects to the season; and it may be so; but, I perceive them in none of my turnips, which are as clear and as sound, though not so large, as they were last year.

246. Seed is a great matter. Perhaps the best way, for farmers in general, would be always to save some, culling the plants carefully, as mentioned in paragraph 32. This might be sown, and also some English seed, the expense being so very trifling compared with the value of the object. At any rate, by saving some seed, a man has something to sow; and he has it always ready. He might change his seed once in three or four years. But, never forgetting carefully to select the

plants, from which the seed is to be raised.

POSTSCRIPT TO THE CHAPTER ON SWEDISH TURNIPS.

247. Since writing the above, I have seen Mr. Judge Mitchell, and having requested him to favour me with a written account of his experiment, he has obligingly complied with my request in a letter, which I here insert, together with my answer.

DEAR SIR, Ploudome, 7 Dec. 1818.

248. About the first of June last, I received the First Part of your Year's Residence in the United States, which I was much pleased with, and particularly the latter part of the book, which contains a treatise on the culture of the Ruta Baga. This mode of culture was new to me, and I thought it almost impossible that a thousand bushels should be raised from one acre of

ground. However, I felt very anxious to try the expe-

riment in a small way.

249. Accordingly, on the 6th day of June, I ploughed up a small piece of ground, joining my salt meadow, containing sixty-five rods, that had not been ploughed for nearly thirty years. I ploughed the ground deep, and spread on it about ten wagon loads of composition manure; that is to say, rich earth and yard manure mixed in a heap, a layer of each alternately. I then harrowed the ground with an iron-toothed harrow, until the surface was mellow, and the manure well mixed with the earth.

250. On the first of July I harrowed the ground over several times, and got the surface in good order; but, in consequence of such late ploughing, I dared not venture to cross-plough, for fear of tearing up the sods, which were not yet rotten. On the 7th of July I ridged the ground, throwing four furrows together, and leaving the tops of the ridges four feet asunder, and without putting in any manure. I went very shoal with the plough, because deep ploughing would have turned up the sods.

251. On the eighth of July I sowed the seed, in single rows on the tops of the ridges, on all the ridges except about eighteen. On eight of these I sowed the seed on the 19th of July, when the first sowing was up, and very severely attacked by the flea; and I was fearful of losing the whole of the crop by that insect. About the last of July there came a shower, which gave the turnips a start; and, on the eighth day of August I transplanted eight of the remaining rows, early in the morning. The weather was now very dry, and the turnips sown on the 19th of July were just coming up. On the 10th of August I transplanted the two other rows at mid-day, and, in consequence of such dry weather, the tops all died; but, in a few days, began to look green. And, in a few weeks, those that had been transplanted looked as thrifty as those that had been sown.

252. On the 10th of August I regulated the sown rows, and left the plants standing from six to twelve inches

apart.

253. A part of the seed I received from you, and a part I had from France a few years ago. When I

gathered the crop, the transplanted turnips were nearly as large as those that stood where they were sown.

and two bushels on sixty-five rod of ground; a crop arising from a mode of cultivation for which, Sir, I feel very much indebted to you. This crop, as you will perceive, wants but two bushels and a fraction of five hundred bushels to the acre; and I verily believe, that, on this mode of cultivation, an acre of land, which will bring a hundred bushels of corn ears, will produce from seven to eight hundred bushels of the Ruta Baga Turnip.

255. Great numbers of my turnips weigh six pounds each. The greens were almost wholly destroyed by a caterpillar, which I never before saw; so that I had no opportunity of trying the use of them as cattle-food; but, as to the root, cattle and hogs eat it greedily, and cattle as well as hogs eat up the little bits that remain attached to the fibres, when these are cut from the bulbs.

256. I am now selling these turnips at half a dollar

a bushel.

257. With begging you to accept of my thanks for the useful information, which, in common with many others, I have received from your Treatise on this valuable plant,

I remain,

Dear Sir,

Your most obedient servant,

SINGLETON MITCHELL.

To Mr. Wm. Cobbett, Hyde Park.

258. P.S. I am very anxious to see the Second Part of your Year's Residence. When will it be published?

ANSWER.

DEAR SIR, Hyde Park, 9th Dec. 1818.

259. Your letter has given me very great pleasure.

You have really tried the thing: you have given it a

fair trial. Mr. Tull, when people said of his horse-hoeing system, that they had tried it, and found it not to answer, used to reply: "What have they tried?

" all lies in the little word IT."

your account is. It is a complete answer to all those, who talk about loss of ground from four-feet ridges; and especially when we compare your crop with that of Mr. James Byrd, of Flushing; whose ground was prepared at an early season; who manured richly; who kept his land like a neat garden; and, in short, whose field was one of the most beautiful objects of which one can form an idea; but, whose ridges were about two feet and a half apart, instead of four feet, and who had three hundred and fifty bushels to the acre, while you, with all your disadvantages of late ploughing and sods beneath, had at the rate of five hundred bushels.

261. From so excellent a judge as you are, to hear commendation of my little Treatise, must naturally be very pleasing to me, as it is a proof that I have not enjoyed the protection of America without doing something for it in return. Your example will be followed by thousands; a new and copious source of human sustenance will be opened to a race of free and happy people; and to have been, though in the smallest degree, instrumental in the creating of this source, will always be a subject of great satisfaction, to,

Dear Sir,

Your most obedient,

And most humble servant, WM. COBBETT.

- of my Year's Residence to the press. I dare say it will be ready in three weeks.
- 263. I conclude this chapter by observing, that a boroughmonger hireling, who was actually fed with pap, purchased by money paid to his father by the minister Pitt, for writing and publishing lies against the Prince of Wales and the Duke of York, the ac-

I saw in the father's own hand-writing; this bireling, when he heard of my arrival on Long Island, called it my Lemnos, which allusion will, I hope, prove not to have been wholly inapt; for, though my life is precisely the reverse of that of the unhappy Philoctetes, and though I do not hold the arrows of Hercules, I do possess arrows; I make them felt too at a great distance, and, I am not certain, that my arrows are not destined to be the only means of destroying the

Trojan Boroughmongers.

264. Having introduced a Judge here by name, it may not be amiss to say, for the information of my English readers, what sort of persons these Long-Island Judges are. They are, some of them, Resident Judges, and others Circuit Judges. They are all gentlemen of known independent fortune, and of known excellent characters and understanding. They receive a mere acknowledgment for their services; and they are, in all respects, liberal gentlemen. Those with whom I have the honour to be acquainted have fine and most beautiful estates; and I am very sure, that what each actually expends in acts of hospitality and benevolence surpasses what such a man as Burroughs. or Richards, or Bailey, or Gibbs, or, indeed, any of the set, expends upon every thing, except taxes. Mr. Judge Lawrence, who came to invite me to his house as soon as he heard of my landing on the Island, keeps a house such as I never either saw or heard of before: My son James went with a message to him a little while ago, and, as he shot his way along, he was in his shooting dress. He found a whole house full of company, amongst whom were the celebrated Dr. MITCHELL and Mr. CLINTON, the Governor of this state; but, they made him stay and dine. Here was he, a boy, with his rough, shooting dress on, dining with Judges, Sheriffs, and Generals, and with the Chief Magistrate of a Commonwealth more extensive, more populous, and forty times as rich as Scotland; a Chief Magistrate of very great talents, but in whom empty pride forms no ingredient. Big wigs and long robes and supercilious airs, are necessary only when the object is to deceive

H 5

and overawe the people. I'll engage that to supply Judge Lawrence's house that one week required a greater sacrifice of animal life than merciful Gibbs's kitchen demands in a year: but, then, our hearty and liberal neighbour never deals in human sacrifices.

CHAP. VII.

POTATOES.

I have made no experiments as to this root, and I am now about to offer my opinions as to the mode of cultivating it. But, so much has been said and written against me on account of my scouting the idea of this root as being proper as food for man, I will, out of respect for public opinion, here state my reasons for thinking that the Potatoe is a root, worse than useless.

266. When I published some articles upon this subject, in England, I was attacked by the Irish writers with as much fury as the Newfoundlanders attack people who speak against the Pope; and with a great deal less reason; for, to attack a system, which teaches people to fill their bellies with fish for the good of their souls, might appear to be dictated by malice against the sellers of the fish; whereas, my attack upon Potatoes, was no attack upon the sons of St. Patrick, to whom, on the contrary, I wished a better sort of diet to be afforded. Nevertheless, I was told, in the Irish papers, not that I was a fool: that might have been rational; but, when I was, by these zealous Hibernians, called a liar, a slanderer, a viper, and was reminded of all my political sins, I could not help thinking, that, to use an Irish Peeress's expression with regard to her Lord, there was a little of the Potatoe sprouting out of their head.

267. These rude attacks upon me even were all nameless, however; and, with nameless adversaries

do not like to join battle. Of one thing I am very glad; and that is, that the Irish do not like to live upon what their accomplished countryman Doctor Drenan, calls "Ireland's lazy root." There is more sound political philosophy in that poem than in all the enormous piles of Plowden and Musgrave. When I called it a lazy root; when I satyrized the use of it; the Irish seemed to think that their national honour was touched. But, I am happy to find, that it is not taste, but necessity, which makes them mess-mates with the pig; for when they come to this country, they invariably prefer to their "favourite root," not only fowls, geese, ducks and turkeys, but even the flesh of oxen, pigs and sheep!

268. In 1815, I wrote an article, which I will here insert, because it contains my opinions upon this subject. And when I have done that, I will add some calculations as to the comparative value of an acre of wheat and an acre of potatoes. The article was a letter to the Editor of the Agricultural Magazine; and

was in the following words:

To the Editor of the Agricultural Magazine.
Sir,

269. In an article of your Magazine for the month of September last, on the subject of my Letters to Lord Sheffield, an article with which, upon the whole, I have reason to be very proud, you express your dissent with me upon some matters, and particularly relative to potatoes. The passage to which I allude, is in these words: "As to a former diatribe of his on Potatoes, we "regarded it as a pleasant example of argument for "argument's sake; as an agreeable jumble of truth and "of mental rambling."

270. Now, Sir, I do assure you, that I never was more serious in my life, than when I wrote the essay, or, rather, casually made the observations against the cultivation and use of this worse than uscless root. If it was argument for argument's sake, no one, that I can recollect, ever did me the honour to show that the argument was fallacious. I think it a subject of great im-

portance; I regard the praises of this root and the preference given to it before corn, and even some other roots, to have arisen from a sort of monkey-like imitation. It has become, of late years, the fashion to extol the virtues of potatoes, as it has been to admire the writings of Milton and Shakespear. God, almighty and all fore-seeing, first permitting his chief angel to be disposed to rebel against him; his permitting him to enlist whole squadrons of angels under his banners; his permitting this host to come and dispute with him the throne of heaven; his permitting the contest to be long, and, at one time, doubtful; his permitting the devils to bring cannon into this battle in the clouds; his permitting one devil or angel, I forget which, to be split down the middle, from crown to crotch, as we split a pig; his permitting the two halves, intestines and all, to go slap, up together again, and become a perfect body; his then, causing all the devil host to be tumbled head-long down into a place called Hell, of the local situation of which no man can have an idea; his, causing gates (iron gates too) to be erected to keep the devil in; his permitting him to get out, nevertheless, and to come and destroy the peace and happiness of his new creation; his causing his son to take a pair of compasses out of a drawer, to trace the form of the earth: all this, and, indeed, the whole of Milton's poem is such barbarous trash, so outrageously offensive to reason and to common sense, that one is naturally led to wonder how it can have been tolerated by a people, amongst whom astronomy, navigation, and chemistry are understood. But, it is the fashion to turn up the eyes, when Paradise Lost is mentioned; and, if you fail herein you want taste; you want judgment even, if you do not admire this absurd and ridiculous. stuff, when, if one of your relations were to write a letter in the same strain, you would send him to a madhouse and take his estate. It is the sacrificing of reason to fashion. And as to the other "Divine Bard," the case is still more provoking. After his ghosts, witches, sorcerers, fairies, and monsters; after his bombast and puns and smut, which appear to have been not much relished by his comparatively rude contemporaries, had had their full swing; after hundreds of thousands of

pounds had been expended upon embellishing his works; after numerous commentators and engravers and painters and booksellers had got fat upon the trade; after jubilees had been held in honour of his memory; at a time when there were men, otherwise of apparently good sense, who were what was aptly enough termed Shakespear-mad. At this very moment an occurrence took place, which must have put an end, for ever, to this national folly, had it not been kept up by infatuation and obstinacy without parallel. Young IRELAND, I think his name was WILLIAM, no matter from what motive, though I never could see any harm in his motive. and have always thought him a man most unjustly and brutally used. No matter, however, what were the inducing circumstances, or the motives, he did write, and bring forth, as being Shakespear's, some plays, a prayer, and a love-letter. The learned men of England, Ireland and Scotland met to examine these performances. Some doubted, a few denied; but, the far greater part, amongst whom were Dr. PARR, Dr. WHARTON, and Mr. George Chalmers, declared, in the most positive terms, that no man but Shakespear could have written those things. There was a division; but this division arose more from a suspicion of some trick, than from any thing to be urged against the merit of the writings. The plays went so far as to be ACTED. Long lists of subscribers appeared to the work. And, in short, it was decided, in the most unequivocal manner, that this young man of sixteen years of age had written so nearly like Shakespear, that a majority of the learned and critical classes of the nation most firmly believed the writings to be Shakespear's; and, there cannot be a doubt, that, if Mr. Ireland had been able to keep his secret, they would have passed for Shakespear's 'till the time shall come when the whole heap of trash will, by the natural good sense of the nation, be consigned to everlasting oblivion; and, indeed, as folly ever doats on a darling, it is very likely, that these last found productions of "our immortal bard" would have been regarded as his best. Yet, in spite of all this; in spite of what one would have thought was sufficient to make blind people see, the fashion has been kept up; and, what excites some-

thing more than ridicule and contempt, Mr. Ireland, whose writings had been taken for Shakespear's, was, when he made the discovery, treated as an impostor and a cheat, and hunted down with as much rancour as if he had written against the buying and selling of seats in Parliament. The learned men; the sage critics; the Shakespear-mad folks; were all so ashamed, that they endeavoured to draw the public attention from themselves to the young man. It was of his impositions that they now talked, and not of their own folly. When the witty clown, mentioned in Don Quixote, put the nuncio's audience to shame by pulling the real pig out from under his cloak, we do not find that that audience were, like our learned men, so unjust as to pursue him with reproaches and with every act that a vindictive mind can suggest. They perceived how foolish they had been, they hung down their heads in silence, and, I dare say, would not easily be led to admire the

mountebank again.

271. It is fashion, Sir, to which in these most striking instances, sense and reason have yielded; and it is to fashion that the potatoe owes its general cultivation and use. If you ask me whether fashion can possibly make a nation prefer one sort of diet to another, I ask you what is it that can make a nation admire Shakespear? What is it that can make them call him a "Divine Bard," nine-tenths of whose works are made up of such trash as no decent man, now-a-days, would not be ashamed, and even afraid, to put his name to? What can make an audience in London sit and hear, and even appland, under the name of Shakespear, what they would hoot off the stage in a moment, if it came forth under any other name? When folly has once given the fashion she is a very persevering dame. An American writer, whose name is George Dorsey, I believe, and who has recently published a pamphlet, called, "The UNITED STATES AND ENGLAND, &c." being a reply to an attack on the morals and government and learning of the Americans, in the "Quarterly Review," states, as matter of justification, that the People of America sigh with delight to see the plays of Shapespear, whom

they claim as their countryman; an honour, if it be disputed, of which I will make any of them a voluntary surrender of my share. Now, Sir, what can induce the American to sit and hear with delight the dialogues of Falstaff and Poins, and Dame Quickly and Doll Tearsheet? What can restrain them from pelting Parson Hugh, Justice Shallow, Bardolph, and the whole crew off the stage! What can make them endure a ghost cap-à-pie, a prince, who, for justice sake, pursues his uncle and his mother, and who stabs an old gentleman in sport, and cries out "dead for a ducat! dead!" What can they find to "delight" them in punning clowns, in ranting heroes, in sorcerers, ghosts, witches, fairies, monsters, sooth-sayers, dreamers; in incidents out of nature, in scenes most unnecessarily bloody. How they must be delighted at the story of Lear putting the question to his daughters of which loved him most, and then dividing his kingdom among them, according to their professions of love; how delighted to see the fantastical disguise of Edgar, the treading out Gloucester's eyes, and the trick by which it is pretended he was made to believe, that he had actually fallen from the top of the cliff! How they must be delighted to see the stage filled with green boughs, like a coppice, as in Macbeth, or streaming like a slaughterhouse, as in Titus Andronicus! How the young girls in America must be tickled with delight at the dialogues in Troilus and Cressida, and more especially at the pretty observations of the Nurse, I think it is in Romeo and Juliet! But, it is the same all through the work. I know of one other, and only one other, book, so obscene as this; and, if I were to judge from the high favour in which these two books seem to stand, I should conclude, that wild and improbable fiction, bad principles of morality and politicks, obscurity in meaning, bombastical language, forced jokes, puns, and smut, were fitted to the minds of the people. But I do not thus judge. It is fashion. These books are in fashion. Every one is ashamed not to be in the fashion. It is the fashion to extol potatoes, and to eat potatoes. Every one joins in extolling potatoes, and all the world like potatoes,

or pretend to like them, which is the same thing in effect.

272. In those memorable years of wisdom, 1800 and 1801, you can remember, I dare say, the grave discussions in Parliament about potatoes. It was proposed by some one to make a law to encourage the growth of them; and, if the Bill did not pass, it was, I believe, owing to the ridicule which Mr. Horne Tooke threw upon that whole system of petty legislation. Will it be believed, in another century, that the law-givers of a great nation actually passed a law to compel people to eat pollard in their bread, and that, too, not for the purpose of degrading or punishing, but for the purpose of doing the said people good by adding to the quantity of bread in a time of scarcity? Will this be believed? In every bushel of wheat there is a certain proportion of flour, suited to the appetite and the stomach of man; and a certain proportion of pollard and bran, suited to the appetite and stomach of pigs, cows, and sheep. But the parliament of the years of wisdom wished to cram the whole down the throat of man, together with the flour of other grain. And what was to become of the pigs, cows, and sheep ! Whence were the pork, butter, and mutton to come? And were not these articles of human food as well as bread? The truth is, that pollard, bran, and the coarser kinds of grain, when given to cattle, make these cattle fat; but when eaten by man make him lean and weak. And yet this bill actually became a law!

273. That period of wisdom was also the period of the potatoe-mania. Bulk was the only thing sought after; and, it is a real fact, that Pitt did suggest the making of beer out of straw. Bulk was all that was looked after. If the scarcity had continued a year longer, I should not have been at all surprised, if it had been proposed to feed the people at rack and manger. But, the Potatoe! Oh! What a blessing to man! Lord Grenville, at a birth-day dinner given to the foreign ambassadors, used not a morsel of bread, but, instead of it, little potatoe cakes, though he had, I dare say, a plenty of lamb, poultry, pig, &c. All of which had

been fatted upon corn or meal, in whole or in part. Yes, Sir, potatoes will do very well along with plenty of animal food, which has been fatted on something better than potatoes. But, when you and I talk of the use of them, we must consider them in a very different light.

274. The notion is, that potatoes are cheaper than wheat flour. This word cheap is not quite expressive enough, but it will do for our present purpose. I shall consider the cost of potatoes, in a family, compared with that of flour. It will be best to take the simple case of

the labouring man.

275. The price of a bushel of fine flour, at Botley, is, at this time, 10s. The weight is 56lbs. The price of a bushel of potatoes is 2s. 6d. They are just now dug up, and are at the cheapest. A bushel of potatoes which are measured by a large bushel, weighs about 60lbs. dirt and all, for they are sold unwashed. Allow Albs. for dirt, and the weights are equal. Well, then, here is toiling Dick with his four bushels of potatoes, and John with his bushel of flour. But, to be fair, I must allow, that the relative price is not always so much in favour of flour. Yet, I think you will agree with me, that upon an average, five bushels of potatoes do cost as much as one bushel of flour. You know very well, that potatoes in London, sell for 1d. and sometimes for 2d. a pound; that is to say, sometimes for 11. 7s. 6d. and sometimes for 21. 15s. the five bushels. This is notorious. Every reader knows it. And did you ever hear of a bushel of flour selling for 21. 15s. Monstrous to think of! And yet the tradesman's wife, looking narrowly to every halfpenny, trudges away to the potatoe shop to get five or six pounds of this wretched root for the purpose of saving flour! She goes and gives 10d. for ten pounds of potatoes, when she might buy five pounds of flour with the same money! Before her potatoes come to the table, they are, even in bulk, less than 5lbs. or even 3lbs. of flour made into a pudding. Try the experiment yourself Sir, and you will soon be able to appreciate the economy of this dame.

276. But, to return to Dick and John; the former has got his five bushels of potatoes, and the latter his bushel of flour. I shall by and by, have to observe upon the stock that Dick must lay in, and upon the stowage that he must have; but, at present, we will trace these two commodities in their way to the mouth and in their effects upon those who eat them. Dick has got five bushels at once, because he could have them a little cheaper. John may have his Peck or Gallon of flour: for that has a fixed and indiscriminating price. It requires no trick in dealing, no judgment, as in the case of the roots, which may be wet, or hollow, or hot; flour may be sent for by any child able to carry the quantity wanted. However, reckoning Dick's trouble and time nothing in getting home his five bushels of potatoes, and supposing him to have got the right sort, a " fine sort," which he can hardly fail of, indeed, since the whole nation is now full of "fine sort," let us now see how he goes to work to consume them. He has a piece of bacon upon the rack, but he must have some potatoes too. On goes the pot, but there it may as well hang, for we shall find it in continual requisition. For this time the meat and roots boil together. But, what is Dick to have for supper? Bread? No. He shall not have bread, unless he will have bread for dinner. Put on the Pot again for supper. Up an hour before day light and on with the pot. Fill your luncheonbag, Dick: nothing is so relishing and so strengthening out in the harvest-field, or ploughing on a bleak hill in winter, as a cold potatoe. But, be sure, Dick, to wrap your bag well up in your clothes, during winter, or, when you come to lunch, you may, to your great surprise, find your food transformed into pebbles. Home goes merry Dick, and on goes the pot again. Thus 1095 times in the year Dick's pot must boil. This is, at least, a thousand times oftener than with a bread and meat diet. Once a week baking and once a week boiling, is as much as a farm house used to require. There must be some fuel consumed in winter for warmth. But here are, at the least, 500 fires to be made for the sake of these potatoes, and, at a penny a fire, the

amount is more than would purchase four bushels of flour, which would make 288 lbs. of bread, which at 7 lbs. of bread a day, would keep John's family in bread for 41 days out of the 365. This I state as a fact challenging contradiction, that, exclusive of the extra labour, occasioned by the cookery of potatoes, the fuel required, in a year, for a bread diet, would cost, in any part of the kingdom, more than would keep a family, even in baker's bread for 41 days in the year, at

the rate of 71 lbs. of bread a day.

277. John, on the contrary, lies and sleeps on Sunday morning 'till about 7 o'clock. He then gets a bit of bread and meat, or cheese, if he has either. The mill gives him his bushel of flour in a few minutes. His wife has baked during the week. He has a pudding on Sunday, and another batch of bread, before the next Sunday. The moment he is up, he is off to his stable, or the field, or the coppice. His breakfast and luncheon are in his bag. In spite of frost he finds them safe and sound. They give him heart, and enable him to go through the day. His 56 lbs. of flour, with the aid of 2d. in yeast, bring him 72 lbs. of bread; while, after the dirt and peelings and waste are deducted, it is very doubtful whether Dick's 300 lbs. of potatoes bring 200 lbs. of even this watery diet to his lips. It is notorious, that in a pound of clean potatoes there are 11 ounces of water, half an ounce of earthy matter, an ounce of fibrous and strawey stuff, and I know not what besides. The water can do Dick no good, but he must swallow these 11 ounces of water in every pound of potatoes. How far earth and straw may tend to fatten or strengthen cunning Dick, I do not know; but, at any rate, it is certain, that, while he is eating as much of potatoe as is equal in nutriment to 1lb. of bread, he must swallow about 14oz. of water, earth, straw, &c. for, down they must go altogether, like the Parliament's bread in the years of wisdom, 1800 and 1801. But, suppose every pound of potatoes to bring into Dick's stomach a 6th part in nutritious matter, including in the gross pound all the dirt, eyes, peeling, and other inevitable waste. Divide his gross 300 lbs. by 6, and you will find him with 50 lbs. of nutritious matter for the same sum that John has laid out in 72 lbs. of nutritious matter, besides the price of 288 lbs. of bread in a year, which Dick lays out in extra fuel for the eternal boilings of his pot. Is it any wonder that his cheeks are like two bits of loose leather, while he is pot-bellied, and weak as a cat? In order to get half a pound of nutritious matter into him, he must swallow about 50 ounces of water, earth, and straw. Without ruminating faculties how he is to bear this

cramming?

278. But Dick's disadvantages do not stop here. He must lay in his store at the beginning of winter, or he must buy through the nose. And, where is he to find stowage? He has no caves. He may pie them in the garden, if he has none; but, he must not open the pie in frosty weather. It is a fact not to be disputed, that a full tenth of the potatoe crop is destroyed, upon an average of years, by the frost. His wife, or stout daughter, cannot go out to work to help to earn the means of buying potatoes. She must stay at home to boil the pot, the everlasting pot! There is no such thing as a cold dinner. No such thing as women sitting down on a hay-cock, or a shock of wheat, to their dinner, ready to jump up at the approach of the shower. Home they must tramp, if it be three miles, to the fire that ceaseth not, and the pot as black as Satan. No wonder, that in the brightest and busiest seasons of the year, you see from every cottage door, staring out at you, as you pass, a smoky-capped, greasy-heeled woman. The pot, which keeps her at home, also gives her the colour of the chimney, while long inactivity swells her heels.

279. Now, Sir, I am quite serious in these my reasons against the use of this root, as food for man. As food for other animals, in proportion to its cost, I know it to be the worst of all roots that I know any thing of; but that is another question. I have here been speaking of it as food for man; and, if it be more expensive than flour to the labourer in the country, who, at any rate, can stow it in pies, what must it be to tradesman's

and artizan's families in towns, who can lay in no store, and who must buy by the ten pound or quarter of a hundred at a time? When broad-faced Mrs. Wilkins tells Mrs. Tomkins, that, so that she has "a potatoe" for her dinner, she does not care a farthing for bread, I only laugh, knowing that she will twist down a half pound of beef with her "potatoe," and has twisted down half a pound of buttered toast in the morning, and means to do the same at tea time without prejudice to her supper and grog. But when Mrs. Tomkins gravely answered, "yes, Ma'am, there is nothing like "a potatoe; it is such a saving in a family," I really should not be very much out of humour to see the têtea-tête broken up by the application of a broom-stick.

280. However, Sir, I am talking to you now, and, as I am not aware that there can be any impropriety in it, I now call upon you to show, that I am really wrong in my notions upon this subject; and this, I think you are, in some sort bound to do, seeing that you

have, in a public manner, condemned them.

281. But, there remains a very important part of the subject yet undiscussed. For, though you should be satisfied, that 300 lbs. of potatoes are not, taking every thing into consideration, more than equal to about 30lbs. of flour, you may be of opinion, that the disproportion in the bulk of the crops is, in favour of potatoes, more than sufficient to compensate for this. I think this is already clearly enough settled by the relative prices of the contending commodities; for, if the quantity of produce was on the side of potatoes, their price would be in proportion.

282. I have heard of enormous crops of potatoes; as high, I believe, as 10 tons grow upon an acre. I have heard of 14 sacks of wheat upon an acre. I never saw above 10 grow upon an acre. The average crop of wheat is about 24 bushels, in this part of England, and the average crop of potatoes about 6 tons. The weight of the wheat 1,440 lbs. and that of the potatoes 13,440 lbs. Now, then, if I am right in what has been said above, this bulk of potatoes barely keeps place with that of the wheat; for, if a bushel of wheat does not make 56 lbs.

Brings S

of flour, it weighs 60 lbs. and leaves pollard and bran to make up the deficiency. Then, as to the cost: the ground must be equally good. The seed is equally expensive. But the potatoes must be cultivated during their growth. The expense of digging and cartage and stowage is not less than 2 l. an acre at present prices. The expense of reaping, housing, and threshing is, at present prices, 10s. less. The potatoes leave no straw, the wheat leaves straw, stubble, and gleanings for pigs. The straw is worth, at least 31. an acre, at present prices. It is, besides, absolutely necessary. It litters, in conjunction with other straw, all sorts of cattle; it sometimes helps to feed them; it covers half the buildings in the kingdom; and makes no small part of the people's beds. The potatoe is a robber in all manner of ways. It largely takes from the farm-yard, and returns little, or nothing to it; it robs the land more than any other plant or root, it robs the eaters of their time. their fuel, and their health; and, I agree fully with Monsieur Tissor, that it robs them of their mental

283. I do not deny, that it is a pleasant enough thing to assist in sending down lusty Mrs. Wilkins's good half pound of fat roast-beef. Two or three ounces of water earth, and straw, can do her no harm; but, when I see a poor, little, pale-faced, life-less, pot-bellied boy peeping out at a cottage-door, where I ought to meet with health and vigour, I cannot help cursing the fashion which has given such general use to this root, as food for man. However, I must say, that the chief ground or my antipathy to this root is, that it tends to debase the common people, as every thing does, which brings their mode of living to be nearer that of cattle. The man and his pig, in the potatoe system, live pretty much upon the same diet, and eat nearly in the same manner and out of nearly the same utensil. The same eternallyboiling pot cooks their common mess. Man, being master, sits at the first table; but, if his fellow-feeder comes after him, he will not fatten, though he will live upon the same diet. Mr. Curwen found potatoes to supply the place of hay, being first well cooked; but

they did not supply the place of oats; and yet fashion has made people believe, that they are capable of supplying the place of bread! It is notorious, that nothing will fatten on potatoes alone. Carrots, parsnips, cabbages, will, in time, fatten sheep and oxen, and, some of them, pigs; but, upon potatoes alone, no animal that I ever heard of will fatten. And yet, the greater part, and, indeed, all the other roots and plants here mentioned, will yield, upon ground of the same quality, three or four times as heavy a crop as potatoes, and will, too, for a long while, set the frosts at defiance.

284. If, Sir, you do me the honour to read this letter, I shall have taken up a good deal of your time; but the subject is one of much importance in rural economy, and therefore, cannot be wholly uninteresting to you. I will not assume the sham modesty to suppose, that my manner of treating it makes me unworthy of an answer; and, I must confess, that I shall be disappointed unless you make a serious attempt to prove to me, that I am

in error.

I am, Sir,
Your most obedient,
And most humble Servant,
WM. COBBETT.

285. Now, observe, I never received any answer to this. Much abuse. New torrents of abuse; and, in language still more venomous than the former; for now the Milton and Shakespear men, the critical Parsons, took up the pen; and when you have an angry Priest for adversary, it is not the common viper, but the rattle-snake that you have to guard against. However, as no one put his name to what he wrote, my remarks went on producing their effect; and a very considerable effect they had.

286. About the same time Mr. Timothy Brown of Peckham Lodge, who is one of the most understanding and most worthy men I ever had the honour to be acquainted with, furnished me with the following compa-

rative estimate relative to wheat and potatoes.

PRODUCE OF AN ACRE OF WHEAT.

THE RESERVE
rom fifty to
ds of Wheat.
2,400
和为"特别, 是
Butches of the
9 400
2,400
界領別是他們
全场的产生经。经过
i wang will
点 中国由市市市
41 STEP 18 2-19 W
Weight Total
nds of Flour.
2,139
ds of Bread.
as of Dream.
ion zirtean
9 7301
2,7391
the trained
2,739½ s.
the trained
s. good crop; s of Potatoes.
s. good crop; s of Potatoes.
s. good crop;
s. good crop; s of Potatoes.
s of Polatoes. 22,400 ands of Flour.
s of Potatoes.
s of Potatoes. 22,400 ands of Flour. 2,240
s of Polatoes. 22,400 ands of Flour.
s of Potatoes. 22,400 ands of Flour. 2,240
s of Potatoes. 22,400 ands of Flour. 2,240

289. Thus, then, the nutritious contents of the Potatoes surpass that of the wheat but by a few pounds; but to get at those contents, unaccompanied with nine times their weight in earth, straw, and water, is impossible. Nine pounds of earth, straw and water must, then, be swallowed, in order to get at the one pound of flour!

290. I beg to be understood as saying nothing against the cultivation of potatoes in any place, or near any place where there are people willing to consume them at half a dollar a bushel, when wheat is two dollars a bushel. If any one will buy dirt to eat, and if one can get dirt to him with more profit than one can get wheat to him, let us supply him with dirt by all means. It is his taste to eat dirt; and, if his taste have nothing immoral in it, let him, in the name of all that is ridiculous, follow his taste. I know a prime Minister, who picks his nose and regales himself with the contents. I solemnly declare this to be true. I have witnessed the worse than beastly act scores of times; and yet, I do not know, that he is much more of a beast than the greater part of his associates. Yet, if this were all; if he were chargeable with nothing but this; if he would confine his swallow to this, I do not know that the nation would have any right to interfere between his nostrils and his gullet.

291. Nor do I say, that it is filthy to eat potatoes. I do not ridicule the using of them as sauce. What I laugh at is, the idea of the use of them being a saving; of their going further than bread; of the cultivation of them in lieu of wheat adding to the human sustenance of a country. This is what I laugh at; and laugh I must as long as I have the above estimate before me.

292. As food for cattle, sheep or hogs, this is the worst of all the green and root crops; but, of this I have said enough before; and, therefore, I now dismiss the Potatoe with the hope, that I shall never again have to write the word, or to see the thing.

CHAP. VIII.

COWS, SHEEP, HOGS, AND POULTRY.

293. Cows.-With respect to cows, need we any other facts than those of Mr. Byrd to prove how advantageous the Swedish turnip culture must be to those who keep cows in order to make butter and cheese? The greens come to supply the place of grass, and to add a month to the feeding on green food. They come just at the time when cows, in this country, are let go dry. It is too hard work to squeeze butter out of straw and corn stalks; and, if you could get it out, it would not, pound for pound, be nearly so good as lard, though it would be full as white. To give cows fine hay no man thinks of; and, therefore, dry they must be from November until March, though a good piece of cabbages added to the turnip greens would keep them on in milk to their calving time; or, 'till within a month of it at any rate. The bulbs of Swedish turnips are too valuable to give to cows; but the cabbages, which are so easily raised. may be made subservient to their use.

fed my sheep upon Swedish turnips. I have now only to add, that, in the case of early lambs for market, cabbages, and especially savoys, in February and March would be excellent for the ewes. Sheep love green. In a turnip field, they never touch the bulb, till every bit of green is eaten. I would, therefore, for this purpose have some cabbages, and, if possible, of the savoy kind

295. Hogs.—This is the main object, when we tall of raising green and root crops, no matter how near to or how far from the spot where the produce of the farm is to be consumed. For, pound for pound, the hog if the most valuable animal; and, whether fresh or salted is the most easily conveyed. Swedish turnips or cab bages or Mangel Wurzel will fatten an ox; but, that which would, in four or five months, fatten the ox, would keep fifteen August Pigs from the grass going to the

grass coming, on Long Island. Look at their worth in June, and compare it with the few dollars that you have got by fatting the ox; and look also at the manure in the two cases. A farmer, on this Island fatted two oxen last winter upon corn. He told me, after he had sold them, that, if he had given the oxen away, and sold the corn, he should have had more money in his pocket. But, if he had kept, through the winter, four or five summer pigs upon this corn, would they have eaten all his corn to no purpose? I am aware, that pigs get something at an

ox-stable door; but what a process is this!

296. My hogs are now living wholly upon Swedish turnip greens, and, though I have taken no particular pains about the matter, they look very well, and, for store hogs and sows, are as fat as I wish them to be. My English hogs are sleek, and fit for fresh pork; and all the hogs not only eat the greens but do well upon them. But, observe, I give them plenty three times a day. In the forenoon we get a good wagon load, and that is for three meals. This is a main thing, this plenty; and, the farmer must see to it with his OWN EYES; for, workmen are all starvers, except of themselves. I never had a man in my life, who would not starve a hog, if I would let him; that is to say, if the food was to be got by some labour. You must, therefore, see to this; or, you do not try the thing at all.

297. Turnip greens are, however, by no means equal to cabbages, or even to cabbage leaves. The cabbage, and even the leaf, is the fruit of the plant; which is not the case with the Turnip green. Therefore the latter must, especially when they follow summer cabbages, be

given in greater proportionate quantities.

298. As to the bulb of the Swedish turnip, I have said enough, in the First Part, as food for hogs; and I should not have mentioned the matter again, had I not been visited by two gentlemen, who came on purpose (from a great distance) to see, whether hogs really would eat Swedish turnips! Let not the English farmers laugh at this; let them not imagine, that the American farmers are a set of simpletons on this account: for, only about thirty years ago, the English farmers would, not, indeed, have gone a great distance to ascertain the fact, but

would have said at once, that the thing was false. It is not more than about four hundred years since the Londoners were wholly supplied with cabbages, spinage, turnips, carrots, and all sorts of garden stuff from Flanders. And now, I suppose, that one single parish in Kent grows more garden stuff than all Flanders. The first settlers came to America long and long before even the white turnip made its appearance in the fields in England. The successors of the first settlers trod in the foot-steps of their fathers. The communication with England did not bring out good English farmers. Books made little impression unaccompanied with actual experiments on the spot. It was reserved for the Boroughmongers, armed with gags, halters, and axes, to drive from England experience and public spirit sufficient to introduce the culture of the green and root crops to the fields of America.

299. The first gentleman, who came to see whether hogs would eat Swedish turnips, saw some turnips tossed down on the grass to the hogs, which were eating sweet little loaved cabbages. However, they eat the turnips too before they left off. The second, who came on the afternoon of the same day, saw the hogs eat some bulbs chopped up. The hogs were pretty hungry, and the quantity of turnips small, and there was such a shoving and pushing about amongst the hogs to snap up the bits, that the gentleman observed, that they "liked them as " well as corn."

300. In paragraph 134 I related a fact of a neighbour of mine in Hampshire having given his Swedish turnips, after they had borne seed, to some lean pigs, and had, with that food, made them fit for fresh pork, and sold them as such. A gentleman from South Carolina was here in July last, and I brought some of mine which had then borne seed. They were perfectly sound. The hogs ate them as well as if they had not borne seed. We boiled some in the kitchen for dinner; and they appeared as good as those eaten in the winter. This shews clearly how well this root keeps.

301. Now, these facts being, I hope, undoubted, is it not surprising, that, in many parts of this fine country, it is the rule to keep only one pig for every cow! The

cow seems as necessary to the pig as the pig's mouth is necessary to his carcass. There are, for instance, six cows; therefore, when they begin to give milk in the spring, six pigs are set on upon the milk, which is given them with a suitable proportion of pot liquor (a meat pot) and of rye, or Indian, meal, making a diet far superior to that of the families of labouring men in England. Thus the pigs go on 'till the time when the cows (for want of moist food) become dry. Then the pigs are shut up, and have the new sweet Indian corn heaped into their stye 'till they are quite fat, being half fat, mind, all the summer long, as they run barking and capering about. Sometimes they turn sulky, however, and will not eat enough of the corn; and well they may, seeing that they are deprived of their milk. child from its pap all at once, and you will find, that it will not, for a long while, relish its new diet. What a system! but if it must be persevered in, there might, it appears to me, be a great improvement made even in it; or, the labour of milking and of the subsequent operaions, all being performed by women, is of great inconrenience. Better let each pig suck its adopted mother it once, which would save a monstrous deal of labour, and prevent all possibility of waste. There would be no lopping about; and, which is a prime consideration in dairy system, there would be clean milking; for, it as been proved by Doctor Anderson, that the last rop is fourteen times as good as the first drop; and, I vill engage, that the grunting child of the lowing mother would have that last drop twenty times a day, or would ull the udder from her body. I can imagine but one ifficulty that can present itself to the mind of any one isposed to adopt this improvement; and that is, the eaching of the pig to suck the cow. This will appear difficulty to those only who think unjustly of the unerstandings of pigs: and, for their encouragement, I eg leave to refer them to DANIEL'S RURAL SPORTS, here they will find, that, in Hampshire, Sir John 1ildmay's gamekeeper, Toomer, taught a sow to point t partridges and other game; to quarter her ground ke a pointer, to back the pointers, when she hunted ith them, and to be, in all respects, the most docile

pointer of the finest nose. This fact is true beyond all doubt. It is known to many men now alive. Judge, then, how easily a pig might be taught to milk a cow, and what a "saving of labour" this would produce!

302. It is strange what comfort men derive even from the deceptions which they practise upon themselves. The milk and fat pot-liquor and meal are, when put together, called, in Long Island, swill. The word comes from the farm-houses in England, but it has a new meaning attached to it. There it means the mere wash; the mere drink given to store hogs. But, here it means rich fatting food. "There, friend Cobbett," said a gentleman to me, as we looked at his pigs in September last, "do thy English pigs look better than these?" "No," said I, "but what do these live on?" He said he had given them all summer, "nothing but "swill." "Aye," said I, "but what is swill?" It was, for six pigs, nothing at all, except the milk of six very fine cows, with a bin of shorts and meal always in requisition, and with the daily supply of liquor from a pot and a spit, that boils and turns without counting

the cost.

303. This is very well for those who do not care a straw, whether their pork cost them seven cents a pound or half a dollar a pound; and, I like to see even the waste; because it is a proof of the easy and happy life of the farmer. But, when we are talking of profitable agriculture, we must examine this swill tub, and see what it contains. To keep pigs to a profit, you must carry them on to their fatting time at little expense. Milk comes from all the grass you grow and almost the whole of the dry fodder. Five or six cows will sweep a pretty good farm as clean as the turnpike road. Pigs, till well weaned must be kept upon good food. My pigs will always be fit to go out of the weaning stye at three months old. The common pigs require four months. Then out they go never to be fed again, except on grass, greens, or roots, till they arrive at the age to be fattened. If they will not keep themselves in growing order upon this food, it is better to shoot them at once. But, I never yet saw a hog that would not. The difference between the good sort and the bad sort is, that the former will

always be fat enough for fresh pork, and the latter will not; and that, in the fatting, the former will not require (weight for weight of animal) more than half the food

that the latter will to make them equally fat.

304. Out of the milk and meal system another monstrous evil arises. It is seldom that the hogs come to a proper age before they are killed. A hog has not got his growth till he is full two years old. But, who will, or can, have the patience to see a hog eating Long-Island swill for two years? When a hog is only 15 or 16 months old, he will lay on two pounds of fat for every one pound that will, out of the same quantity of food, be laid on by an eight or ten months' pig. Is it not thus with every animal? A stout boy will be like a herring upon the very food that would make his father fat, or kill him. However, this fact is too notorious to be insisted on.

305. Then, the young meat is not so nutritious as the old. Steer-beef is not nearly so good as ox-beef. Young wether mutton bears the same proportion of inferiority to old wether mutton. And, what reason is there, that the principle should not hold good as to hog-meat? In Westphalia, where the fine hams are made, the hogs are never killed under three years old. In France, where I saw the fattest pork I ever saw, they keep their fatting hogs to the same age. In France and Germany, the people do not eat the hog, as hog: they use the hog to put fat into other sorts of meat. They make holes in beef, mutton, veal, turkeys and fowls, and, with a tin tube, draw in hits of fat hog. which they call lard, and, as it is all fat, hence comes it that we call the inside fat of a hog, lard. Their beef and mutton and veal would be very poor stuff without the aid of the hog; but, with that aid, they make them all exceedingly good. Hence it is, that they are induced to keep their hogs till they have quite done growing; and, though their sort of hogs is the very worst I ever saw, their hog meat was the very fattest. The common weight in Normandy and Brittany is from six to eight hundred pounds. But, the poor fellows there do not slaughter away as the farmers do here, ten or a dozen hogs at a time, so that the sight makes one wonder whence are to come the mouths to eat the meat. In France du lard is a thing to smell to, not to cat. I like the eating far better than the smelling system; but when we are talking about farming for gain, we ought to inquire how any given weight of meat can be obtained at the cheapest rate. A hog in his third year, would, on the American plan, suck half a dairy of cows perhaps; but, then, mind, he would, upon a third part of the fatting food, weigh down four Long Island " shuts," the average weight of which is about one hundred and fifty pounds.

306. A hog, upon rich food, will be much bigger at the end of a year, than a hog upon good growing diet; but, he will not be bigger at the end of two years, and especially at the end of three years. His size is not to be forced on, any more than that of a child, beyond

a certain point.

307. For these reasons, if I were settled as a farmer, I would let my hogs have time to come to their size. Some sorts come to it at an earlier period, and this is amongst the good qualities of my English hoge; but, to do the thing well, even they ought to have two years

to grow in.

308. The reader will think, that I shall never cease talking about hogs; but, I have now done, only I will add, that, in keeping hogs in a growing state, we must never forget their lodging! A few boards, flung carelessly over a couple of rails, and no litter beneath, is not the sort of bed for a hog. A place of suitable size, large rather than small, well sheltered on every side, covered with a roof that lets in no wet or snow. No opening, except a door way big enough for a hog to go in; and the floor constantly well bedded with leaves of trees, dry, or, which is the best thing, and what a hog deserves, plenty of clean straw. When I make up my hog's lodging place for winter, I look well at it, and consider, whether, upon a pinch, I could, for once and away, make shift to lodge in it myself. If I shiver at the thought, the place is not good enough for my hogs. It is not in the nature of a hog to sleep in the cold. Look at them. You will see them, if they have the means, cover themselves over for the night.

what is done by neither horse, cow, sheep, dog nor cat. And this should admonish us to provide hogs with warm and comfortable lodging. Their sagacity in providing against cold in the night, when they have it in their power to make such provision, is quite wonderful. You see them looking about for the warmest spot: then they go to work, raking up the litter so as to break the wind off; and when they have done their best, they lie down. I had a sow that had some pigs running about with her in April last. There was a place open to her on each side of the barn. One faced the east and the other the west; and, I observed, that she sometimes took to one side and sometimes to the other. One evening her pigs had gone to bed on the east side. She was out eating till it began to grow dusk. I saw her go into her pigs, and was surprised to see her come out again; and therefore, looked a little to see what she was after. There was a high heap of dung in the front of the barn to the south. She walked up to the top of it, raised her nose, turned it very slowly, two or three times, from the north-east to the north-west, and back again, and at last, it settled at about south-east, for a little bit. She then came back, marched away very hastily to her pigs, roused them up in a great bustle, and away she trampled with them at her heels to the place on the west side of the barn. There was so little wind, that I could not tell which way it blew, till I took up some leaves, and tossed them in the air. I then found, that it came from the precise point which her nose had settled at. And thus was I convinced, that she had come out to ascertain which way the wind came, and finding it likely to make her young ones cold in the night, she had gone and called them up, though it was nearly dark, and taken them off to a more comfortable birth. Was this an instinctive, or was it a reasoning proceeding? At any rate, let us not treat such animals as if they were stocks and stones.

309. Poultry.—I merely mean to observe, as to poultry, that they must be kept away from turnips and cabbages, especially in the early part of the growth of these plants. When turnips are an inch or two high a good large flock of turkeys will destroy an acre in

half a day, in four feet rows. Ducks and geese will do the same. Fowls will do great mischief. If these things cannot be kept out of the field, the crop must be abandoned, or the poultry killed. It is true, indeed that it is only near the house that poultry plague you much: but, it is equally true, that the best and richest land is precisely that which is near the house, and this, on every account, whether of produce or application, is the very land where you ought to have these crops.

CHAP, IX.

PRICES OF LAND, LABOUR, FOOD AND RAIMENT.

310. Land is of various prices, of course. But, as I am, in this Chapter, addressing myself to English Farmers, I am not speaking of the price either of lanc in the wildernesses, or of land in the immediate vicinage of great cities. The wilderness price is two or three dollars an acre: the city price four or five hundred The land at the same distance from New York that Chelsea is from London, is of higher price than the land at Chelsea. The surprising growth of these cities and the brilliant prospect before them, give value to

every thing that is situated in or near them.

311. It is my intention, however, to speak only of farming land. This, too, is, of course, affected in its value by the circumstance of distance from market but, the reader will make his own calculations as to this matter. A farm, then, on this Island, any where not nearer than thirty miles off, and not more distant than sixty miles from, New York, with a good farmhouse, barn, stables, sheds, and styes; the land fenced into fields with posts and rails, the wood-land being in the proportion of one to ten of the arable land, and there being on the farm a pretty good orchard; such a farm. if the land be in a good state, and of an average quality, is worth sixty dollars an acre, or thirteen pounds sterling; of course, a farm of a hundred acres would cost one thousand three hundred pounds. The rich lands on the necks and bays, where there are meadows and surprisingly productive orchards, and where there is water carriage, are worth, in some cases, three times this price. But, what I have said will be sufficient to enable the reader to form a pretty correct judgment on the subject. In New Jersey, in Pennsylvania, every where the price differs with the circumstances of water carriage, quality of land, and distance from market.

312. When I say a good farm-house, I mean a house a great deal better than the general run of farmhouses in England. More neatly finished on the inside. More in a parlour sort of style; though round about the house, things do not look so neat and tight as in England. Even in Pennsylvania, and amongst the Quakers too, there is a sort of out-ofdoors slovenliness, which is never hardly seen in England. You see bits of wood, timber, boards, chips, lying about, here and there, and pigs and cattle trampling about in a sort of confusion, which would make an English farmer fret himself to death; but which is here seen with great placidness. The out-buildings, except the barns, and except in the finest counties of Pennsvlvania, are not so numerous, or so capacious, as in England, in proportion to the size of the farms. The reason is, that the weather is so dry. Cattle need not covering a twentieth part so much as in England, except hogs, who must be warm as well as dry. However, these share with the rest, and very little covering they

313. Labour is the great article of expense upon a farm; yet it is not nearly so great as in England, in proportion to the amount of the produce of a farm, especially if the poor-rates be, in both cases, included. However, speaking of the positive wages, a good farm-labourer has twenty-five pounds sterling a-year and his board and lodging; and a good day-labourer has, upon an average, a dollar a day. A woman servant, in a farm-house, has from forty to fifty dollars a year, or eleven pounds sterling. These are the

average of the wages throughout the country. But, then, mind, the farmer has nothing (for, really, it is not worth mentioning) to pay in poor-rates; which in England, must always be added to the wages that a farmer pays; and, sometimes, they far exceed the wages.

314. It is, too, of importance to know, what sort of labourers these Americans are; for, though a labourer is a labourer, still there is some difference in them; and, these Americans are the best that I ever They mow four acres of oats, wheat, rye, or barley in a day, and, with a cradle, lay it so smooth in the swarths, that it is tied up in sheaths with the greatest neatness and ease. They mow two acres and a half of grass in a day, and they do the work well. And the crops, upon an average, are all, except the wheat, as heavy as in England. The English farmer will want nothing more than these facts to convince him

that the labour, after all, is not so very dear.

315. The causes of these performances, so far beyond those in England, is first, the men are tall and well built; they are bony rather than fleshy; and they live, as to food, as well as man can live. And, secondly, they have been educated to do much in a day. The farmer here generally is at the head of his "boys," as they, in the kind language of the country, are called. Here is the best of examples. My old and beloved friend, Mr. James Paul, used, at the age of nearly sixty to go at the head of his mowers, though his fine farm was his own, and though he might, in other respects, be called a rich man; and, I have heard, that Mr. ELIAS HICKS, the famous Quaker Preacher, who lives about nine miles from this spot, has this year, at seventy years of age, cradled down four acres of rye in a day. I wish some of the preachers of other descriptions, especially our fat parsons in England, would think a little of this, and would betake themselves to "work with their hands the "things which be good, that they may have to give to " him who needeth," and not go on any longer gormandizing and swilling upon the labour of those who need.

by the American labourer, his skill, the versatility of his talent, is a great thing. Every man can use an axe, a saw, and a hammer. Scarcely one who cannot do any job at rough carpentering, and mend a plough or a wagon. Very few indeed, who cannot kill and dress pigs and sheep, and many of them oxen and calves. Every farmer is a neat butcher; a butcher for market; and, of course, "the boys" must learn. This is a great convenience. It makes you so independent as to a main part of the means of housekeeping. All are ploughmen. In short, a good labourer here, can do any thing that is to be done upon a farm.

317. The operations necessary in miniature cultivation they are very awkward at. The gardens are ploughed in general. An American labourer uses a spade in a very awkward manner. They poke the earth about as if they had no eyes; and toil and muck themselves half to death to dig as much ground in a day as a Surrey man would dig in about an hour of hard work. Banking, hedging, they know nothing about. They have no idea of the use of a bill-hook, which is so adroitly used in the coppices of Hampshire and Sussex. An axe is their tool, and with that tool, at cutting down trees or cutting them up, they will do ten times as much in a day as any other men that I ever saw. Set one of these men on upon a wood of timber trees, and his slaughter will astonish you. A neighbour of mine tells a story of an Irishman, who promised he could do any thing, and whom, therefore, to begin with, the employer sent into the wood to cut down a load of wood to burn. He staid a long while away with the team, and the farmer went to him fearing some accident had happened. "What are you about all this time?" said the farmer. The man was hacking away at a hickory tree, but had not got it half down; and that was all he had done. An American, black or white, would have had half a dozen trees cut down, cut up into lengths, put upon the carriage, and brought home, in the time.

318. So that our men, who come from England, must not expect, that, in these common labours of the

country, they are to surpass, or even equal, these " Yankees," who, of all men that I ever saw, are the most active and the most hardy. They skip over a fence like a greyhound. They will catch you a pig in an open field by racing him down; and they are afraid of nothing. This was the sort of stuff that filled the frigates of DECATUR, HULL, and BRAINBRIDGE. No wonder that they triumphed when opposed to poor pressed creatures, worn out by length of service and illusage, and encouraged by no hope of fair-play. My LORD COCHRANE said, in his place in parliament, that it would be so; and so it was. Poor Cashman, that brave Irishman, with his dying breath, accused the government and the merchants of England of withholding from him his pittance of prize money! Ought not such a vile, robbing, murderous system to

be destroyed?

319. Of the same active, hardy, and brave stuff, too, was composed the army of Jackson, who drove the invaders into the Gulph of Mexico, and who would have driven into the same Gulph the army of Waterloo, and the heroic gentleman, too, who lent his hand to the murder of Marshal Ney. This is the stuff that stands between the rascals, called the Holy Alliance, and the slavery of the whole civilized world. This is the stuff that gives us Englishmen an asylum; that gives us time to breathe; that enables us to deal our tyrants blows, which, without the existence of this stuff, they never would receive. This America, this scene of happiness under a free government, is the beam in the eye, the thorn in the side, the worm in the vitals, of every despot upon the face of the earth.

320. An American labourer is not regulated, as to time, by clocks and watches. The sun, who seldom hides his face, tells him when to begin in the morning and when to leave off at night. He has a dollar, a whole dollar for his work; but then it is the work of a whole day. Here is no dispute about hours. " Hours "were made for slaves," is an old saying; and, really, they seem here to act upon it as a practical maxim. This is a great thing in agricultural affairs. It prevents so many disputes. It removes so great a cause

of disagreement. The American labourers, like the tavern keepers, are never servile, but always civil. Neither boobishness nor meanness mark their character. They never creep and fawn, and are never rude. Employed about your house as day-labourers, they never come to interlope for victuals or drink. They have no idea of such a thing: their pride would restrain them if their plenty did not; and, thus would it be with all labourers, in all countries, were they left to enjoy the fair produce of their labour. Full pocket or empty pocket, these American labourers are always the same men: no saucy cunning in the one case, and no base crawling in the other. This, too, arises from the free institutions of government. A man has a voice because he is a man, and not because he is the possessor of money. And, shall I never see our English labourers in this happy state?

321. Let those English farmers, who love to see a poor wretched labourer stand trembling before them with his hat off, and who think no more of him than of a dog, remain where they are; or, go off, on the cavalry horses, to the devil at once, if they wish to avoid the tax-gatherer; for, they would, here, meet with so many mortifications, that they would, to a cer-

tainty, hang themselves in a month.

322. There are some, and even many, farmers, who do not work themselves in the fields. But, they all attend to the thing, and are all equally civil to their working people. They manage their affairs very judiciously. Little talking. Orders plainly given in few words, and in a decided tone. This is their only secret.

323. The cattle and implements used in husbandry are cheaper than in England; that is to say, lower priced. The wear and tear not nearly half so much as upon a farm in England of the same size. The climate, the soil, the gentleness and docility of the horses and oxen, the lightness of the wagons and carts, the lightness and toughness of the wood of which husbandry implements are made, the simplicity of the harness, and, above all, the ingenuity and handiness of the workmen in repairing, and in making shift; all these

where horses are kept, the shoeing of them is the

most serious kind of expense.

324. The first business of a farmer is, here, and ought to be every where, to live well: to live in ease and plenty; to "keep hospitality," as the old English saving was. To save money is a secondary consideration; but, any English farmer, who is a good farmer there, may, if he will bring his industry and care with him, and be sure to leave his pride and insolence (if he have any) along with his anxiety, behind him, live in ease and plenty here, and keep hospitality, and save a great parcel of money too. If he have the Jack-Daw taste for heaping little round things together in a hole, or chest, he may follow his taste. I have often thought of my good neighbour, John Gater, who, if he were here, with his pretty clipped hedges, his garden-looking fields, and his neat homesteads, would have visitors from far and near; and, while every one would admire and praise, no soul would envy him his possessions. Mr. GATER would soon have all these things. The hedges only want planting; and he would feel so comfortably to know that the Botley Parson could never again poke his nose into his sheep-fold or his However, let me hope, rather, that the destruction of the Borough-tyranny, will soon make England a country fit for an honest and industrious man to live in. Let me hope, that a relief from grinding taxation will soon relieve men of their fears of dying in poverty, and will, thereby, restore to England the "hospitality," for which she was once famed, but which now really exists no where but in America.

whose the end of the said of the said the said the

are set the course the displacement of the second of the bearing and the course of the

CHAP. X.

EXPENSES OF HOUSE-KEEPING.

325. It must be obvious, that these must be in proportion to the number in family, and to the style of living. Therefore, every one knowing how he stands in these two respects, the best thing for me to do is to give an account of the *prices* of house-rent, food, raiment, and servants; or, as they are called here,

helpers.

326. In the great cities and towns house-rent is very high-priced; but, then, nobody but mad people live there except they have business there, and, then, they are paid back their rent in the profits of that business. This is so plain a matter, that no argument is necessary. It is unnecessary to speak about the expenses of a farm-house; because the farmer eats, and very frequently wears, his own produce. If these be high-priced, so is that part which he sells. Thus both ends meet with him.

327. I am, therefore, supposing the case of a man, who follows no business, and who lives upon what he has got. In England he cannot eat and drink and wear the interest of his money; for the Boroughmongers have pawned half his income, and they will have it, or his blood. He wishes to escape from this alternative. He wishes to keep his blood, and enjoy his money too. He would come to America; but he does not know, whether prices here will not make up for the robbery of the Borough-villains; and he wishes to know, too, what sort of society he is going into. Of the latter I will speak in the next chapter.

328. The price of house-rent and fuel is, when at more than three miles from New York, as low as it is at the same distance from any great city or town in England. The price of wheaten bread is a third lower than it is in any part of England. The price of beef,

mutton, lamb, veal, small pork, hog-meat, poultry, is one half the London price; the first as good, the two next very nearly as good, and all the rest far, very far, better than in London. The sheep and lambs that I now kill for my house are as fat as any that I ever saw in all my life; and they have been running in wild ground, wholly uncultivated for many years, all the summer. A lamb, killed the week before last, weighing in the whole, thirty-eight pounds, had five pounds of loose fat and three pounds and ten ounces of suet. We cut a pound of solid fat from each breast; and, after that it was too fat to be pleasant to eat. My flock being small, forty, or thereabouts, of some neighbours joined them; and they have all got fat together. I have missed the interlopers lately: I suppose the "Yorkers" have eaten them up by this time. What they have fattened on except brambles and cedars, I am sure I do not know. If any Englishman should be afraid that he will find no roast-beef here, it may be sufficient to tell him, that an ox was killed, last winter, at Philadelphia, the quarters of which weighed two thousand, two hundred, and some odd pounds, and he was sold TO THE BUTCHER for one thousand three hundred dollars. This is proof enough of the spirit of enterprize, and of the disposition in the public to encourage it. I believe this to have been the fattest ox that ever was killed in the world. Three times as much money, or, perhaps, ten times as much, might have been made, if the ox had been shown for money. But, this the owner would not permit; and he sold the ox in that condition. I need hardly say that the owner was a Quaker. New Jersey had the honour of producing this ox, and the owner's name was JOB TYLER.

329. That there must be good bread in America is pretty evident from the well known fact, that hundreds of thousands of barrels of flour are, most years sent to England, finer than any that England can produce. And, having now provided the two principal articles, I will suppose, as a matter of course, that a gentleman will have a garden, an orchard, and a cow or two; but, if he should be able (no easy matter) to find a genteel

butter, cheaper, and, upon an average, better than in England. The garden stuff, if he send to New York for it, he must buy pretty dear; and, faith, he ought to buy it dear, if he will not have some planted and

preserved.

330. Cheese, of the North River produce, I have bought as good of Mr. STICKLER of New York as I ever tasted in all my life; and, indeed, no better cheese need be wished for than what is now made in this country. The average price is about seven pence a pound (English money), which is much lower than even middling cheese is in England. Perhaps, generally speaking, the cheese here is not so good as the better kinds in England; but, there is none here so poor as the poorest in England. Indeed the people would not eat it, which is the best security against its being made. Mind, I state distinctly, that as good cheese as I ever tasted, if not the best, was of American produce. I know the article well. Bread and cheese dinners have been the dinners of a good fourth of my life. I know the Cheshire, Gloucester, Wiltshire, Stilton, and the Parmasan; and I never tasted better than American cheese, bought of Mr. STICKLER, in Broad Street, And this cheese Mr. STICKLER informs New York. me is nothing uncommon in the county of Cheshire in Massachusetts; he knows at least a hundred persons himself that make it equally good. And, indeed, why should it not be thus in a country where the pasture is so rich; where the sun warms every thing into sweetness; where the cattle eat the grass close under the shade of the thickest trees; which we know well they will not do in England. Take any fruit which has grown in the shade in England, and you will find that it has not half the sweetness in it, that there is in fruit of the same bulk, grown in the sun. But, here the sun sends his heat down through all the boughs and leaves. The manufacturing of cheese is not yet generally brought, in this country, to the English perfection: but, here are all the materials, and the rest will soon follow.

331. Groceries, as they are called, are, upon an

average, at far less than half the English price. Tea, sugar, coffee, spices, chocolate, cocoa, salt, sweet oil; all free of the Boroughmongers' taxes and their pawn, are so cheap as to be within the reach of every one. Chocolate, which is a treat to the rich, in England, is here used even by the negroes. Sweet oil, raisins, currants; all the things from the Levant, are at a fourth or fifth of the English price. The English people, who pay enormously to keep possession of the East and West Indies, purchase the produce even of the English possessions at a price double of that which the Americans give for that very produce! What a hellish oppression must that people live under! Candles and soap (quality for quality) are half the English price. Wax candles (beautiful) are at a third of the English price. It is no very great piece of extravagence to burn wax candles constantly here, and it is frequently done by genteel people, who do not make their own candles.

232. Fish I have not mentioned, because fish is not every where to be had in abundance. But, any where near the coast it is; and it is so cheap, that one wonders how it can be brought to market for the money. Fine Black-Rock, as good, at least, as codfish, I have seen sold, and in cold weather too, at an English farthing a pound. They now bring us fine fish round the country to our doors, at an English three pence a pound. I believe they count fifty or sixty sorts of fish in New York market, as the average. Oysters, other shell-fish, called clams. In short, the variety and abundance are such that I cannot describe them.

from these facts: nobody but the free negroes who have families ever think of eating a sheep's head and pluck. It is seldom that oxen's heads are used at home, or sold, and never in the country. In the course of the year hundreds of calves' heads, large bits and whole joints of meat, are left on the shambles, at New York, for any body to take away that will. They generally fall to the share of the street hogs, a thousand or two of which are constantly fatting in New York on the meat and fish flung out of the houses. I shall be told, that it

is only in hot weather, that the shambles are left thus garnished. Very true; but, are the shambles of any other country thus garnished in hot weather? Oh! no! If it were not for the superabundance, all the food

would be sold at some price or other.

334. After bread, flesh, fish, fowl, butter, cheese and groceries, comes fruit. Apples, pears, cherries, peaches at a tenth part of the English price. The other day I met a man going to market with a wagon load of winter pears. He had high boards on the sides of the wagon, and his wagon held about 40 or 50 bushels. I have bought very good apples this year for four pence halfpenny (English) a bushel, to boil for little pigs. Besides these, strawberries grow wild in abundance; but no one will take the trouble to get them. Huckle-berries in the woods in great abundance, chesnuts all over the country. Four pence half-penny (English) a quart for these latter. Cranberries, the finest fruit for tarts that ever grew, are bought for about a dollar a bushel, and they will keep, flung down in the corner of a room, for five months in the year. As a sauce to venison or mutton, they are as good as currant jelly. Pine apples in abundance, for several months in the year, at an average of an English shilling each. Melons at an average of an English eight pence. In short, what is there not in the way of fruit? All excellent of their kinds and all for a mere trifle, compared to what they cost in England.

335. I am afraid to speak of drink, lest I should be supposed to countenance the common use of it. But, protesting most decidedly against this conclusion, I proceed to inform those, who are not content with the cow for vintner and brewer, that all the materials for making people drunk, or muddle headed, are much cheaper here than in England. Beer, good ale, I mean, a great deal better than the common public-house beer in England; in short, good, strong clear ale, is, at New York, eight dollars a barrel; that is, about fourteen English pence a gallon. Brew yourself, in the country, and it is about seven English pence a gallon; that is to say, less than two pence a quart. No Borough-mongers' tax on malt, hops, or beer! Portugal wine is about half the

price that it is in England. French wine a sixth part of the English price. Brandy and Rum about the same in proportion; and the common spirits of the country are about three shillings and sixpence (English) a gallon. Come on, then, if you love toping; for here you may

drink yourselves blind at the price of sixpence.

336. Wearing Apparel comes chiefly from England, and all the materials of dress are as cheap as they are there; for, though there is a duty laid on the importation, the absence of taxes, and the cheap food and drink, enable the retailer to sell as low here as there. Shoes are cheaper than in England; for, though shoemakers are well paid for their labour, there is no Borough-villain to tax the leather. All the India and French goods are at half the English price. Here no ruffian can seize you by the throat and tear off your suspected handkerchief. Here Signor Walthman, or any body in that line, might have sold French gloves and shawls without being tempted to quit the field of politics as a compromise with the government; and without any breach of covenants, after being suffered to escape with only a gentle squeeze.

337. Household Furniture, all cheaper than in England. Mahogany timber a third part of the English price. The distance shorter to bring it, and the tax next to nothing on importation. The woods here, the pine, the ash, the white oak, the walnut, the tulip-tree, and many others, all excellent. The workman paid high wages, but no tax. No Borough-villains to share

in the amount of the price.

338. Horses, carriages, harness, all as good, as gay, and cheaper than in England. I hardly ever saw a rip in this country. The hackney coach horses and the coaches themselves, at New York, bear no resemblance to things of the same name in London, The former are all good, sound, clean, and handsome. What the latter are I need describe in no other way than to say, that the coaches seem fit for nothing but the fire and the horses for the dogs.

339. Domestic servants! This is a weighty article: not in the cost, however, so much as in the plague. good man servant is worth thirty pounds sterling a year,

and a good woman servant twenty pounds sterling a year. But, this is not all; for, in the first place, they will hire only by the month. This is what they, in fact, do in England; for, there they can quit at a month's warning. The man will not wear a livery, any more than he will wear a halter round his neck. This is no great matter; for, as your neighbours' men are of the same taste, you expose yourself to no humiliation on this score. Neither men nor women will allow you to call them servants, and they will take especial care not to call themselves by that name. This seems something very capricious, at the least; and, as people in such situations of life, really are servants, according to even the sense which Moses gives to the word, when he forbids the working of the man servant and the maid servant, the objection, the rooted aversion, to the name, seems to bespeak a mixture of false pride and of insolence, neither of which belong to the American character, even in the lowest walks of life. I will, therefore, explain the cause of this dislike to the name of servant. When this country was first settled, there were no people that laboured for other people; but, as man is always trying to throw the working part off his own shoulders, as we see by the conduct of priests in all ages, negroes were soon introduced. Englishmen, who had fled from tyranny at home, were naturally shy of calling other men their slaves; and, therefore, "for more grace," as Master Matthew says in the play, they called their slaves servants. But, though I doubt not that this device was quite efficient in quieting their own consciences, it gave rise to the notion, that slave and servant meant one and the same thing, a conclusion perfectly natural and directly deducible from the premises. Hence every free man and woman have rejected with just disdain the appellation of servant. One would think, however, that they might be reconciled to it by the conduct of some of their superiors in life, who, without the smallest apparent reluctance, call themselves "Public Servants," in imitation, I suppose, of English Ministers, and his Holiness, the Pope, who, in the excess of his humility, calls himself, "the Servant of the Servants of the Lord." But, perhaps, the American Domestics have

observed, that "Public Servant" really means master Be the cause what it may, however, they continue mos obstinately to scout the name of servant; and, though they still keep a civil tongue in their head, there is no one of them that will not resent the affront with more bitterness than any other that you can offer. The man therefore, who would deliberately offer such an affron must be a fool. But, there is an inconvenience fa greater than this. People in general are so comfortable situated, that very few, and then only of those who are pushed hard, will become domestics to any body. Se that, generally speaking, Domestics of both sexes are far from good. They are honest; but they are no obedient. They are careless. Wanting frequently in the greater part of those qualities which make their services conducive to the neatness of houses and comfor of families. What a difference would it make in this country, if it could be supplied with nice, clean, dutiful English maid servants! As to the men, it does not much signify; but, for the want of the maids, nothing but the absence of grinding taxation can compensate. As t bringing them with you, it is as wild a project as it would be to try to carry the sunbeams to England. They will begin to change before the ship gets on soundings; and before they have been here a month, you must turn then out of doors, or they will you. If, by any chance, you find them here, it may do; but bring them out and kee them you cannot. The best way is to put on your phil losophy; never to look at this evil without, at the same time, looking at the many good things that you find here. Make the best selection you can. Give good wages, not too much work, and resolve, at all events, t treat them with civility.

340. However, what is this plague, compared with that of the tax gatherer? What is this plague compared with the constant sight of beggars and paupers and the constant dread of becoming a pauper or beggaryourself? If your commands are not obeyed with such alacrity as in England, you have, at any rate, nobod to command you. You are not ordered to "stand and deliver" twenty or thirty times in the year by the insolenagent of Boroughmongers. No one comes to forbid you

to open or shut up a window. No insolent set of Commissioners send their order for you to dance attendance on them, to shew cause why they should not double-tax you; and, when you have shewn cause, even on your oath, make you pay the tax, laugh in your face, and leave you an appeal from themselves to another set, deriving their authority from the same source, and having a similar interest in oppressing you, and thus laying your property prostrate beneath the hoof of an insolent and remorseless tyranny. Free, wholly free, from this tantalizing, this grinding, this odious curse, what need you care about the petty plagues of Domestic Servants?

341. However, as there are some men and some women, who can never be at heart's ease, unless they have the power of domineering over somebody or other, and who will rather be slaves themselves than not have it in their power to treat others as slaves, it becomes a man of fortune, proposing to emigrate to America, to consider soberly, whether he, or his wife, be of this taste; and, if the result of his consideration be in the affirmative, his best way will be to continue to live under the Boroughmongers, or, which I would rather recommend, hang himself at once.

CHAP. XI.

MANNERS, CUSTOMS, AND CHARACTER OF THE PEOPLE.

342. All these are, generally speaking, the same as those of the people of England. The French call this people Les-Anglo Americains; and, indeed, what are they else? Of the manners and customs somewhat peculiar to America I have said so much, here and there, in former Chapters, that I can hardly say any thing new here upon these matters. But, as society is naturally a great thing with a gentleman, who thinks of coming hither with his wife and children, I will endeayour to describe the society that he will find here. To give general descriptions is not so satisfactory as it is to deal a little in particular instances; to tell of what one has seen and experienced. This is what I shall do; and, in this Chapter I wish to be regarded as addressing myself to a most worthy and public-spirited gentleman of moderate fortune in Lancashire, who, with a large family, now balances whether he shall come, or stay.

343. Now, then, my dear Sir, this people contains very few persons very much raised in men's estimation, above the general mass; for, though there are some men of immense fortunes, their wealth does very little indeed in the way of purchasing even the outward signs of respect; and, as to adulation, it is not to be purchased with love or money. Men, be they what they may, are generally called by their two names, without any thing prefixed or added. I am one of the greatest men in this country at present; for people in general call me "Cobbett," though the Quakers provokingly persevere in putting the William before it, and my old friends in Pennsylvania, use even the word Billy, which, in the very sound of the letters, is an antidote to every thing like thirst for distinction.

344. Fielding, in one of his romances, observes, that

there are but few cases, in which a husband can be justified in availing himself of the right which the law gives him to bestow manual chastisement upon his wife, and that one of these, he thinks, is, when any pretensions to superiority of blood make their appearance in her language and conduct. They have a better cure for this malady here; namely; silent, but, ineffable

contempt.

345. It is supposed, in England, that this equality of estimation must beget a general coarseness and rudeness of behaviour. Never was there a greater mistake. No man likes to be treated with disrespect; and, when he finds that he can obtain respect only by treating others with respect, he will use that only means. When he finds that neither haughtiness nor wealth will bring him a civil word, he becomes civil himself; and, I repeat it again and again, this is a country of universal civility.

346. The causes of hypocrisy are the fear of loss and the hope of gain. Men crawl to those, whom, in their hearts, they despise, because they fear the effects of their ill-will and hope to gain by their good-will. The circumstances of all ranks are so easy here, that there is no cause for hypocrisy; and the thing is not of so fascinating a nature, that men should love it for its

own sake.

347. The boasting of wealth, and the endeavouring to disguise poverty, these two acts, so painful to contemplate, are almost total strangers in this country; for, no man can gain adulation or respect by his wealth, and no man dreads the effects of poverty, because no man sees any dreadful effects arising from poverty.

348 That anxious eagerness to get on, which is seldom unaccompanied with some degree of envy of more successful neighbours, and which has its foundation first in a dread of future want, and next in a desire to obtain distinction by means of wealth; this anxious eagerness, so unamiable in itself, and so unpleasant an inmate of the breast, so great a sourer of the temper, is a stranger to America, where accidents and losses, which would drive an Englishman half mad, produce but very little agitation.

K 2

349. From the absence of so many causes of uneasiness, of envy, of jealousy, of rivalship, and of mutual dislike, society, that is to say, the intercourse between man and man, and family and family, becomes easy and pleasant; while the universal plenty is the cause of universal hospitality. I know, and have ever known, but little of the people in the cities and towns in America; but, the difference between them and the people in the country can only be such as is found in all other countries. As to the manner of living in the country, I was, the other day, at a gentleman's house, and I asked the lady for her bill of fare for the year. I saw fourteen fat hogs, weighing about twenty score a piece, which were to come into the house the next Monday; for here they slaughter them all in one day. This led me to ask, "Why, in God's name, what do "you eat in a year?" The bill of fare was this, for this present year: about this same quantity of hogmeat; four beeves; and forty-six fat sheep! Besides the sucking pigs (of which we had then one on the table), besides lambs, and besides the produce of seventy hen fowls, not to mention good parcels of geese, ducks and turkeys, but, not to forget a garden of three quarters of an acre and the butter of ten cows, not one ounce of which is ever sold! What do you think of that? Why, you will say, this must be some great overgrown farmer, that has swallowed up half the country; or some nabob sort of merchant. Not at all. He has only one hundred and fifty four acres of land, (all he consumes is of the produce of this land), and he lives in the same house that his English-born grandfather lived in.

350. When the hogs are killed, the house is full of work. The sides are salted down as pork. The hams are smoked. The lean meats are made into sausages, of which, in this family, they make about two hundred weight. These latter, with broiled fish, eggs, dried beef, dried mutton, slices of ham, tengue, bread, butter, cheese, short cakes, buck-wheat cakes, sweet meats of various sorts, and many other things, make up the breakfast fare of the year, and, a dish of beef steakes is

frequently added.

351. When one sees this sort of living, with the

houses full of good beds, ready for the guests as well as the family to sleep in, we cannot help perceiving, that this is that " English Hospitality" of which we have read so much; but, which Boroughmongers' taxes and pawns have long since driven out of England. This American way of life puts one in mind of Fortescue's fine description of the happy state of the English, produced by their good laws, which kept every man's property sacred, even from the grasp of the king. "Every inhabitant is at his Liberty fully to use " and enjoy whatever his farm produceth, the Fruits of "the Earth, the Increase of his Flock, and the like: "All the Improvements he makes, whether by his own "proper Industry, or of those he retains in his Service, " are his own to use and enjoy without the Lett, Inter-"ruption, or Denial of any: If he be in any wise in-"jured, or oppressed, he shall have his Amends and "Satisfaction against the party offending: Hence it " is, that the Inhabitants are rich in Gold, Silver, and "in all the Necessaries and Conveniences of Life. "They drink no Water, unless at certain Times, upon "a Religious Score, and by way of doing Penance. "They are fed, in great Abundance, with all sorts " of Flesh and Fish, of which they have plenty " every where; they are cloathed throughout in good "Woollens; their Bedding and other Furniture in their "Houses are of Wool, and that in great Store: They "are also well provided with all other Sorts of House-"hold Goods, and necessary Implements for Hus-" bandry: Every one, according to his Rank, hath all "Things which conduce to make Life easy and happy. "They are not sued at Law but before the Ordinary "Judges, where they are treated with Mercy and Jus-"tice, according to the Laws of the Land; neither are "they impleaded in Point of Property, or arraigned " for any Capital Crime, how heinous soever, but be-"fore the King's Judges, and according to the Laws " of the Land. These are the Advantages consequent " from that Political Mixt Government which obtains in England -

352. This passage, which was first pointed out to me by Sir Francis Burdett, describes the state of

England four hundred years ago; and this, with the polish of modern times added, is now the state of the Americans. Their forefathers brought the "English Hospitality" with them; for when they left the country, the infernal Boroughmonger Funding system had not begun. The STUARTS were religious and prerogative tyrants: but they were not, like their successors, the Boroughmongers, taxing, plundering tyrants. Their quarrels with their subjects were about mere words: with the Boroughmongers it is a question of purses and strong-boxes, of goods and chattels, lands and tenements. "Confiscation" is their word; and you must submit, be hanged, or flee. They take away men's property at their pleasure, without any appeal to any tribunal. They appoint Commissioners to seize what they choose. There is, in fact, no law of property The bishop-begotten and hell-born system of Funding has stripped England of every vestige of what was her ancient character. Her hospitality along with her freedom have crossed the Atlantic; and here they are to shame our ruffian tyrants, if they were sensible of shame, and to give shelter to those who may be disposed to deal them distant blows.

353. It is not with a little bit of dry toast, so neatly put in a rack: a bit of butter so round and small; a little milk-pot so pretty and so empty; an egg for you, the host and hostess not liking eggs. It is not with looks that seem to say, "don't eat too much, for the "tax-gatherer is coming." It is not thus that you are received in America. You are not much asked, not much pressed, to eat and drink; but, such an abundance is spread before you, and so hearty and so cordial is your reception, that you instantly lose all restraint, and are tempted to feast whether you be hungry or not. And, though the manner and style are widely different in different houses, the abundance every where prevails. This is the strength of the government: a happy people: and no government

ought to have any other strength.

354. But, you may say, perhaps, that plenty, however great, is not all that is wanted. Very true; for the mind is of more account than the carcass. But,

here is mind too. These repasts, amongst people of any figure, come forth under the superintendance of industrious and accomplished house-wives, or their daughters, who all read a great deal, and in whom that gentle treatment from parents and husbands, which arises from an absence of racking anxiety, has created an habitual, and even an hereditary good humour. These ladies can converse with you upon almost any subject, and the ease and gracefulness of their behaviour are surpassed by those of none of even our best tempered English women. They fade at an earlier age than in England; but, till then, they are as beautiful as the women in Cornwall, which contains, to my thinking, the prettiest women in our country. However, young or old, blooming or fading, well or ill, rich or poor, they still preserve their good humour.

"But, since, alas! frail beauty must decay,

"Curl'd, or uncurl'd, since locks will turn to grey;

"Since painted, or not painted, all shall fade, "And she who scorns a man must die a maid;

"What, then, remains, but well our pow'r to use, "And keep good humour still, whate'er we lose?

"And, trust me, Dear, good-humour can prevail,

"When flights and fits and screams and scolding fail."

355. This beautiful passage, from the most beautiful of poets, which ought to be fastened in large print upon every lady's dressing table, the American women, of all ranks, seem to have by heart. Even amongst the very lowest of the people, you seldom hear of that torment, which the old proverb makes the twin of a

smoky house.

America of native growth. Every farmer is more or less of a reader. There is no broque, no provincial dialect. No class like that which the French call peasantry, and which degrading appellation the miscreant spawn of the Funds have, of late years, applied to the whole mass of the most useful of the people in England, those who do the work and fight the battles. And, as to the men, who would naturally form your acquaintances, they, I know from experience, are as kind, frank, and sensible men as are, on the general run, to be found in England, even with the

power of selection. They are all well-informed: modest without shyness; always free to communicate what they know, and never ashamed to acknowledge that they have yet to learn. You never hear them boast of their possessions, and you never hear them complaining of their wants. They have all been readers from their youth up; and there are few subjects upon which they cannot converse with you, whether of a political or scientific nature. At any rate, they always hear with patience. I do not know that I ever heard a native American interrupt another man while he was speaking. Their sedateness and coolness, the deliberate manner in which they say and do every thing, and the slowness and reserve with which they express their assent; these are very wrongly estimated. when they are taken for marks of a want of feeling. It must be a tale of woe indeed, that will bring a tea from an American's eye; but any trumped up story will send his hand to his pocket, as the ambassadors from the beggars of France, Italy and Germany can fully testify.

357. However, you will not, for a long while, know what to do for want of the quick responses of the English tongue, and the decided tone of the English expression. The loud voice; the hard squeeze by the hand; the instant assent or dissent; the clamorous joy; the bitter wailing; the ardent friendship; the deadly enmity; the love that makes people kill themselves; the hatred that makes them kill others. All these belong to the characters of Englishmen, in whose minds and hearts every feeling exists in the extreme. To decide the question, which character is, upon the whole, best, the American or the English, we must appeal to some third party. But, it is no matter: we cannot change our natures. For my part, who can, in nothing, think or act by halves, I must belie my very nature, if I said that I did not like the character of my own countrymen best. We all like our own parents and children better than other people's parents and children; not because they are better, but because they areo urs; because they belong to us and we to them, and because we must resemble each other. There are

some Americans that I like full as well as I do any man in England; but, if, nation against nation, I put the question home to my heart, it instantly decides in

favour of my countrymen.

are not insincere enough to express much.

359. There is one thing in the Americans, which though its proper place was further back, I have reserved, or rather kept back, to the last moment. It has presented itself several times; but I have turned from the thought, as men do from thinking of any mortal disease that is at work in their frame. It is not covetousness; it is not niggardliness; it is not insincerity; it is not enviousness; it is not cowardice, above all things: it is DRINKING. Aye, and that too, amongst but too many men, who, one would think, would leath it. You can go into hardly any man's house, without being asked to drink wine, or spirits, even in the morning. They are quick at meals, are little eaters, seem to care little about what they eat and never talk about it. This, which arises out of the universal abundance of good and even fine eatables, is very amiable. You are here disgusted with none of those eaters by reputation that are found, especially amongst the Parsons, in England: fellows that unbutton at it. Nor do the Americans sit and tope much after dinner, and talk on till they get into nonsense and smut, which last is a sure mark of a silly and, pretty generally, even of a base mind. But, they tipple; and the infernal spirits they tipple too! The scenes that I witnessed at Harrisburgh I shall never forget. I almost wished (God forgive me!) that there were Boroughmongers here to tax these drinkers: they would soon reduce them to a moderate dose. Any nation that feels tself uneasy with its fulness of good things, has only to resort to an application of Boroughmongers. These are by no means nice feeders or of contracted throat:

they will suck down any thing from the poor man's po

of beer to the rich man's lands and tenements.

360. The Americans preserve their gravity and quietness and good-humour even in their drink; and so much the worse. It were far better for them to be as noisy and quarrelsome as the English drunkards; for then the odiousness of the vice would be more visible, and the vice itself might become less frequent. Few vices want an apology, and drinking has not only its apologies but its praises; for, besides the appellation of "generous wine," and the numerous songs, some in very elegant and witty language, from the pens of debauched men of talents, drinking is said to be necessary, in certain cases at least, to raise the spirits, and to keep out cold. Never was any thing more false. Whatever intoxicates must enfeeble in the end, and whatever enfeebles must chill. It is very well known, in the Northern countries, that, if the cold be such as to produce danger of frost-biting, you must take care not to drink strong liquors.

361. To see this beastly vice in young men is shocking. At one of the taverns at Harrisburgh there were several as fine young men as I ever saw. Well dressed, well educated, polite, and every thing but sober. What a squalid, drooping, sickly set they looked in

the morning!

362. Even little boys at, or under, twelve years of age, go into stores, and tip off their drams! I never struck a child, in anger, in my life, that I recollect; but, if I were so unfortunate as to have a son to do this, he having had an example to the contrary in me. I would, if all other means of reclaiming him failed whip him like a dog, or, which would be better, make him an out-cast from my family.

363. However, I must not be understood as meaning that this tippling is universal amongst gentlemen; and. God be thanked, the women of any figure in life do by no means give into the practice; but, abhor it as much as well-bred women in England, who, in general, no more think of drinking strong liquors, than they do of

drinking poison.

364. I shall be told, that men in the harvest field

must have something to drink. To be sure, where perspiration almost instantly carries off the drink, the latter does not remain so long to burn the liver, or whatever else it does burn. But, I much question the utility even here; and I think, that, in the long run, a water-drinker would beat a spirit drinker at any thing, provided both had plenty of good food. And, besides, beer, which does not burn, at any rate, is within every one's reach in America, if he will but take the trouble to brew it.

365. A man, at Botley, whom I was very severely reproaching for getting drunk and lying in the road, whose name was James Isaacs, and who was, by the by, one of the hardest workers I ever knew, said, in answer, "Why, now, Sir, Noah and Lot were two " very good men, you know, and yet they loved a drop "of drink." "Yes, you drunken fool," replied I, "but "you do not read that Isaac ever got drunk and rolled "about the road." I could not help thinking, however, that the BIBLE SOCIETIES, with the wise Emperor Alexander and the Holy Alliance at their head, might as well (to say nothing about the cant of the thing) leave the Bible to work its own way. I had seen Isaacs dead drunk, lying stretched out, by my front gate, against the public highway; and, if he had followed the example of NOAH, he would not have endeavoured to excuse himself in the modest manner that he did, but would have affixed an everlasting curse on me and my children to all generations.

366. The soldiers, in the regiment that I belonged to, many of whom served in the American war, had a saying, that the Quakers used the word tired in place of the word drunk. Whether any of them do ever get tired themselves, I know not; but, at any rate they most resolutely set their faces against the common use of spirits. They forbid their members to retail them; and, in case of disobedience, they disown them.

367. However, there is no remedy but the introduction of beer, and, I am very happy to know, that beer is, every day, becoming more and more fashionable. At Bristol in Pennsylvania, I was pleased to see excellent beer in clean and nice pewter pots. Beer

does not kill. It does not eat out the vitals and take the colour from the cheek. It will make men "tired," indeed, by midnight; but it does not make them half dead in the morning. We call wine the juice of the grape, and such it is with a proportion of ardent spirits equal, in Portugal wine, to a fifth of the wine; and, therefore, when a man has taken down a bottle of Port or of Madeira, he has nearly half a pint of ardent spirits in him. And yet how many foolish mothers give their children Port wine to strengthen them! I never like your wine-physicians, though they are great favourites with but too many patients. Boniface, in the Beaux Stratagem, says that he has eaten his ale, drunk his ale, worked upon his ale, and slept upon his ale, for forty years, and that he has grown fatter and fatter; but, that his wife (God rest her soul!) would not take it pure: she would adulterate it with brandy; till, at last, finding that the poor woman was never well, he put a tub of her favourite by her bedside, which, in a short time, brought her "a happy release" from this "state of probation," and carried her off into " the world of spirits." Whether Boniface meant this as a pun, I do not know; for, really, if I am to judge from the practice of many of the vagrant fanatics, I must believe, that, when they rave about the Spirit's entering them, they mean that which goes out of a glass drown their throat. Priests may make what they will of their devil; they may make him a reptile with a forked tongue, or a beast with a cloven hoof; they may, like Milton, dress him out with seraphic wings; or like Saint Francis, they may give him horns and tail: but, I say that the devil, who is the strongest tempter, and who produces the most mischief in the world, approaches us in the shape of liquid, not melted brimstone, but wine, gin, brandy, rum, and whiskey. One comfort is, however, that this devil, of whose existence we can have no doubt, who is visible and even tangible, we can, if we will, without the aid of priests, or, rather, in spite of them, easily and safely set at defiance. There are many wrong things which men do against the general and natural bent of their minds. Fraud, theft, and even murder, are frequently, and most frequently, the offspring of want. In these cases, it is a choice of evils; crime or hunger. But, drinking to excess is a man's own act; an evil deliberately sought after; an act of violence committed against reason and against nature; and that, too, without the smallest temptation, except from that vicious appetite, which he

himself has voluntarily created.

368. You, my dear Sir, stand in need of no such lectures as this, and the same is, I hope, the case with the far greater part of my readers; but, if it tend, in the smallest degree, to check the fearful growth of this tree of unmixed evil; if it should make the bottle less cherished even in one small circle; nay, if it keep but one young man in the world in the paths of sobriety, how could my time have been better bestowed?

CHAP. XII.

RURAL SPORTS.

369. There are persons, who question the right of man to pursue and destroy the wild animals, which are called game. Such persons, however, claim the right of killing foxes and hawks; yet, these have as much right to live and to follow their food as pheasants and partridges have. This, therefore, in such persons, is nonsense.

of the field, say, that it is wanton cruelty to shoot or hunt; and that we kill animals from the farm-yard only because their flesh is necessary to our own existence. PROVE THAT. No: you cannot. If you could, it is but the "tyrant's plea;" but you cannot: for we know that men can, and do, live without animal food, and, if their labour be not of an exhausting kind, live well too, and longer than those who eat it. It comes to this, then, that we kill hogs and oxen because

we choose to kill them; and, we kill game for precisely

the same reason.

371. A third class of objectors, seeing the weak position of the two former, and still resolved to eat flesh. take their stand upon this ground: that sportsmen send some game off wounded and leave them in a state of suffering. These gentlemen forget the operations performed upon calves, pigs, lambs and sometimes on poultry. Sir Isaac Coffin prides himself upon teaching the English ladies how to make turkey-capons! Only think of the separation of calves, pigs, and lambs, at an early age, from their mothers! Go, you sentimental eaters of veal, sucking pig and lamb, and hear the mournful lowings, whinings, and bleatings; observe the anxious listen, the wistful look, and the dropping tear, of the disconsolate dams; and, then, while you have the carcases of their young ones under your teeth, cry out, as soon as you can empty your mouths a little, against the cruelty of hunting and shooting. Get up from dinner (but take care to stuff well first), and go and drown the puppies of the bitch, and the kittens of the cat, lest they should share a little in what their mothers have guarded with so much fidelity; and, as good stuffing may tend to make you restless in the night, order the geese to be picked alive, that, however your consciences may feel, your bed, at least, may be easy and soft. Witness all this with your own eyes; and then go weeping to bed, at the possibility of a hare having been terribly frightened without being killed, or of a bird having been left in a thicket with a shot in its body or a fracture in its wing. But, before you go up stairs, give your servants orders to be early at market for fish, fresh out of the water; that they may be scaled, or skinned alive! A truce with you, then, sentimental eaters of flesh: and here I propose the terms of a lasting compromise with you. We must, on each side, yield something: we sportsmen will content ourselves with merely seeing the hares skip and the birds fly; and you shall be content with the flesh and fish that come from cases of natural death, of which I am sure, your compassionate disposition will not refuse us a trifling allowance.

372. Nor have even the Pythagoreans a much better battery against us. Sir RICHARD PHILLIPS, who once rang a peal in my ears against shooting and hunting, does, indeed, eat neither flesh, fish, nor fowl. His abstinence surpasses that of a Carmelite, while his bulk would not disgrace a Benedictine Monk, or a Protestant Dean. But, he forgets, that his shoes and breeches and gloves are made of the skins of animals: he forgets that he writes (and very eloquently too) with what has been cruelly taken from a fowl; and that, in order to cover the books which he has had made and sold, hundreds of flocks and scores of droves must have perished: nay, that, to get him his beaver-hat, a beaver must have been hunted and killed, and, in the doing of which, many beavers may have been wounded and left to pine away the rest of their lives; and, perhaps many little orphan beavers, left to lament the murder of their parents. BEN LEY was the only real and sincere Pythagorean of modern times, that I ever heard of. He protested, not only against eating the flesh of animals, but also against robbing their backs; and, therefore, his dress consisted wholly of flax. But, even he, like Sir Richard Phillips, eat milk, butter, cheese, and eggs; though this was cruelly robbing the hens, cows, and calves; and, indeed causing the murder of the calves. In addition, poor little BEN forgot the materials of book-binding; and, it was well he did; for else, his Bible would have gone into the fire!

373. Taking it for granted, then, that sportsmen are as good as other folks on the score of humanity, the sports of the field, like every thing else done in the fields, tend to produce, or preserve health. I prefer them to all other pastime, because they produce early rising; because they have no tendency to lead young men into vicious habits. It is where men congregate that the vices haunt. A hunter or a shooter may also be a gambler and a drinker; but, he is less likely to be fond of the two latter, if he be fond of the former. Boys will take to something in the way of pastime; and it is better that they take to that which is innocent, healthy, and manly, than that which is vicious, unhealthy, and effeminate. Besides, the scenes of rural

sport are necessarily at a distance from cities and towns. This is another great consideration; for though great talents are wanted to be employed in the hives of men, they are very rarely acquired in these hives: the surrounding objects are too numerous, too near the eye, too frequently under it, and too artificial.

374. For these reasons I have always encouraged my sons to pursue these sports. They have, until the age of 14 or 15, spent their time, by day, chiefly amongst horses and dogs, and in the fields and farmyard; and their candlelight has been spent chiefly in reading books about hunting and shooting and about dogs and horses. I have supplied them plentifully with books and prints relating to these matters. They have drawn horses, dogs, and game themselves. These things, in which they took so deep an interest, not only engaged their attention and wholly kept them from all taste for, and even all knowledge of cards and other senseless amusements; but, they led them to read and write of their own accord; and, never in my life have I set them a copy in writing nor attempted to teach them a word of reading. They have learnt to read by looking into books about dogs and game; and they have learnt to write by imitating my writing, and by writing endless letters to me, when I have been from home, about their dogs and other rural concerns. While the Borough-tyrants had me in Newgate for two years, with a thousand pounds fine, for having expressed my indignation at their flogging of Englishmen, in the heart of England, under a guard of Hanoverian sabres, I received volumes of letters from my children; and, I have them now, from the scrawl of three years, to the neat and beautiful hand of thirteen. I never told them of any errors in their letters. All was well. The best evidence of the utility of their writing, and the strongest encouragement to write again, was a very clear answer from me, in a very precise hand, and upon very nice paper, which they never failed promptly to receive. They have all written to me before they could form a single letter. A little bit of paper, with some inkmarks on it, folded up by themselves, and a wafer stuck in it, used to be sent to me, and it was sure to

bring the writer a very, very kind answer. Thus have they gone on. So far from being a trouble to me, they have been all pleasure and advantage. For many years they have been so many secretaries. I have dictated scores of registers to them, which have gone to the press without my ever looking at them. I dictated registers to them at the age of thirteen, and even of twelve. They have, as to trust-worthiness, been grown persons, at eleven or twelve. I could leave my house and affairs, the paying of men, or the going from home on business, to them at an age when boys in England, in general, want servants to watch them to see that they do not kill chickens, torment kittens, or set the

buildings on fire.

375. Here is a good deal of boasting; but, it will not be denied, that I have done a great deal in a short public life, and I see no harm in telling my readers of any of the means, that I have employed; especially as I know of few greater misfortunes than that of breeding up things to be school-boys all their lives. It is not, that I have so many wonders of the world: it is that I have pursued a rational plan of education, and one that any man may pursue, if he will, with similar effects. I remember, too, that I myself had had a sportsman-education. I ran after the hare-hounds at the age of nine or ten. I have many and many a day left the rooks to dig up the wheat and peas, while I followed the hounds; and have returned home at darknight, with my legs full of thorns and my belly empty to go supperless to bed, and to congratulate myself if I escaped a flogging. I was sure of these consequences; but that had not the smallest effect in restraining me. All the lectures, all the threats, vanished from my mind in a moment upon hearing the first cry of the hounds, at which my heart used to be ready to bound out of my body. I remembered all this. I traced to this taste my contempt for card-playing and for all childish and effeminate amusements. And, therefore, I resolved to leave the same course freely open to my sons. This is my plan of education: others may follow what plan they please.

376. This Chapter will be a head without a body;

for, it will not require much time to give an account of the rural sports of America. The general taste of the country is to *kill* the things in order to have them to *eat*, which latter forms no part of the *sportsman*'s objects

377. There cannot be said to be any thing here, which, we, in England, call hunting. The deer are hunted by dogs, indeed, but the hunters do not follow. They are posted at their several stations to shoot the deer as he passes. This is only one remove from the Indian hunting. I never saw, that I know of, any man that had seen a pack of hounds in America, except those kept by old John Brown, in Bucks County, Pennsylvania, who was the only hunting Quaker that I ever heard of, and who was grandfather of the famous General Brown. In short, there is none of what we call hunting; or, so little, that no man can expect to meet with it.

378. No coursing. I never saw a greyhound here. Indeed, there are no hares, that have the same manners that ours have, or any thing like their fleetness. The woods, too, or some sort of cover, except in the singular instance of the plains in this island, are too near at hand.

379. But, of shooting the variety is endless. Pheasants, partridges, wood-cocks, snipes, grouse, wild-

ducks of many sorts, teal, plover, rabbits.

380. There is a disagreement between the North and the South as to the naming of the two former. North of New Jersey, the pheasants are called partridges, and the partridges are called quails. To the South of New Jersey, they are called by what I think are their proper names, taking the English names of those birds to be proper. For, pheasants do not remain in coveys; but, mix, like common fowls. The intercourse between the males and females is promiscuous, and not by pairs, as in the case of partridges. And these are the manners of the American pheasants, which are found by ones, twos, and so on, and never in families, except when young, when, like chickens, they keep with the old hen. The American partridges are not quails; because quails are gregarious. They keep in flocks, like rooks called crows in America), or like larks, or

starlings; of which the reader will remember a remarkable instance in the history of the migration of those grumbling vagabonds, the Jews, soon after their march from Horeb, when the quails came and settled upon each other's backs to a height of two cubits, and covered a superficial space of two days' journey in diameter. It is a well known fact, that quails flock: it is also well known, that partridges do not, but that they keep in distinct families, which we call coveys from the French couvée, which means the eggs or brood which the hen covers at one time. The American partridges live in coveys. The cock and his pair in the spring. They have their brood by sitting alternately on the eggs, just as the English partridges do; the young ones, if none are killed, or die, remain with the old ones till spring; the covey always live within a small distance of the same spot; if frightened into a state of separation, they call to each other and re-assemble; they roost altogether in a round ring, as close as they can sit, the tails inward and the heads outward; and are in short, in all their manners, precisely the same as the English partridge, with this exception, that they will sometimes alight on a rail or a bough, and that, when the hen sits, the cock, perched at a little distance, makes a sort of periodical whistle, in a monotonous, but very soft and sweet tone.

381. The size of the pheasant is about the half of that of the English. The plumage is by no means so beautiful; but, the flesh is far more delicate. The size of the partridge bears about the same proportion. But its plumage is more beautiful than that of the English, and its flesh is more delicate. Both are delightful, though rather difficult, shooting. The pheasant does not tower, but darts through the trees; and the partridge does not rise boldly, but darts away at no great height from the ground. Some years they are more abundant than other years. This is anabundant year. There are, perhaps, fifty coveys

within half a mile of my house.

382. The wood-cocks are, in all respects, like those in England, except that they are only about three-fifths of the size. They breed here; and are in such

numbers, that some men kill twenty brace, or more in a day. Their haunts are in marshy places, or woods. The shooting of them lasts from the fourth of July till the hardish frosts come. The last we killed this year was killed on the 21st of November. So that here are five months of this sport; and pheasants and partridges are shot from September to April.

383. The snipes are called English snipes, which they resemble in all respects, and are found in great

abundance in the usual haunts of snipes.

384. The grouse is precisely like the Scotch grouse. There is only here and there a place where they are found. But, they are, in those places, killed in great

quantities in the fall of the year.

385. As to wild ducks and other water-fowl, which are come at by lying in wait, and killed most frequently swimming, or sitting, they are slaughtered in whole flocks. An American counts the cost of powder and shot. If he is deliberate in every thing else, this habit will hardly forsake him in the act of shooting. When the sentimental flesh-eaters hear the report of his gun, they may begin to pull out their white handkerchiefs; for death follows his pull of the trigger, with, perhaps, even more certainty than it used to follow the lancet of Doctor Rush.

386. The Plover is a fine bird, and is found in great numbers upon the plains, and in the cultivated fields, of this Island, and at a mile from my house. Plovers are very shy and wary; but they have ingenious enemies to deal with. A wagon, or carriage of some sort, is made use of to approach them; and then they are easily killed.

387. Rabbits are very abundant in some places. They are killed by shooting; for all here is done with

the gun. No reliance is placed upon a dog.

388. As to game-laws there are none, except those which appoint the times for killing. People go where they like, and, as to wild animals, shoot what they like. There is the Common Law, which forbids trespass, and the Statute Law, I believe, of "malicious trespass," or trespass after warning. And these are more than enough; for nobody, that I ever hear of, warns people

off. So that, as far as shooting goes, and that is the sport which is the most general favourite, there never was a more delightful country than this Island. The sky is so fair, the soil so dry, the cover so convenient, the game so abundant, and the people, go where you will, so civil, hospitable, and kind.

CHAP. XIII.

PAUPERS.

389. It is a subject of great exultation in the hireling newspapers of the Borough-villains, that "poverty and poor-rates have found their way to America." As to the former it is literally true; for the poverty that is here has, almost the whole of it, come from Europe; but, the means of keeping the poor arise here upon the spot.

390. Great sums of money are raised in New York, Philadelphia, Boston, and other great sea-ports, for the naintenance of "the poor;" and, the Boroughmongers eagerly catch at the published accounts of this concern, and produce them as proofs, that misery is as great in America as it is under their iron rod. I will strip them

of this pretext in a few minutes.

391. Let us take New York, for instance. Is is notoious that, whatever may be the number of persons reieved by poor rates, the greater part of them are
Europeans, who have come hither, at different periods
and under circumstances of distress, different, of course,
and degree. There is, besides, a class of persons here of
a description very peculiar; namely; the free negroes.
Whatever may have been the motives, which led to their
mancipation, it is very certain, that it has saddled the
white people with a charge. These negroes are a disrderly, improvident set of beings; and, the paupers,

in the country, consist almost wholly of them. Take out the foreigners and the negroes, and you will find, that the paupers of New York do not amount to a hundredt part of those of Liverpool, Bristol, Birmingham, of London, population for population. New York is a sea-port, and the only great sea-port of a large district of country. All the disorderly crowd to it. It teem with emigrants; but, even there, a pauper, who is a sea-port of the country.

white, native American, is a great rarity.

392. But, do the Borough-villains think, that the work pauper has the same meaning here that it has under their scorpion rod? A pauper under them means : man that is able and willing to work, and who does work like a horse; and who is so taxed, has so much of hi earnings taken from him by them to pay the interest or their Debt and the pensions of themselves and their wives, children, and dependents, that he is actuall starving and fainting at his work. This is what is mean by a pauper in England. But, at New York, a paupe is, generally, a man who is unable, or which is mor frequently the case, unwilling to work; who is become debilitated from a vicious life; or, who, like Borough mongers and Priests, finds it more pleasant to live upon the labour of others than upon his own labour. A paul per in England is fed upon bones, garbage, refuse meat and "substitutes for bread." A pauper here expects and has, as much flesh, fish and bread and cake as he can devour. How gladly would many a little trades man, or even little farmer, in England, exchange his diet for that of a New York pauper!

land, there are beggars; because, when they find, that they are nearly starved in the former character, the will try the latter in spite of all the vagrant acts that any hell-born Funding system can engender. And who ever saw a beggar in America? "I have!" exclaims some spy of the Boroughmongers, who hopes to become a Boroughmonger himself. And so have I too I have seen a couple since I have been on this Island and of them I will speak presently. But there are different sorts of beggars too as well as of paupers. In England a beggar is a poor creature, with hardly rage

(mere rags) sufficient to cover its nakedness, so far even as common decency requires. A wretched mortal, the bare sight of whom would freeze the soul of an American within him. A dejected, broken down thing, that approaches you bare-headed, on one knee, with a trembling voice, with " pray bestow your charity, for the Lord "Jesus Christ's sake have compassion on a poor soul;" and if you toss a halfpenny into his ragged hat, he exclaims in an extasy, "God Almighty bless your honour!" though you, perhaps, be but a shoe-black yourself. An American beggar, dressed very much like other people, walks up to you as boldly as if his pockets were crammed with money, and, with a half smile, that seems to say, he doubts of the propriety of his conduct, very civilly asks you, if you can HELP him to a quarter of a dollar. He mostly states the precise sum; and never sinks below silver. In short, there is no begging, properly so called. There is nothing that resembles English begging even

in the most distant degree.

394. I have now been here twenty months, and I have been visited by only two beggars. The first was an Englishman, and what was more to me, a Surrey man too; a native of Croydon. He asked me if I could help him to a quarter of a dollar; for, it is surprising how apt scholars they are. "Yes," said I, "if you will help " my men to do some work first." He said he could not do that, for he was in a hurry. I told him, that, if a man, with a dollar a day, and pork for the tenth part of a dollar a pound, could not earn his living, he ought to be hanged; "however," said I, "as you are the first "Surrey man I ever saw in America besides myself, if " you be not hanged before this day week, and come "here again, I will help you to a quarter of a dollar." He came, and I kept my word. The second beggar was an Italian. This was a personage of "high consideration." He was introduced to the side of my writing table. He behaved with a sort of dignified politeness, mixed with somewhat of reserve, as if he thought the person to whom he was addressing himself a very good sort of man, but of rank inferior to himself. We could not understand each other at first; but, we got into French, and then we could talk. He having laid down

his hat, and being seated, pulled out a large parcel of papers, amongst which was a certificate from the Secretary of State of His Majesty the King of Sardinia, duly signed and countersigned, and sealed with a seal having the armorial bearings of that sovereign. Along with this respectable paper was an English translation of it, done at New York, and authenticated by the Mayor and a Notary Public, with all due formality. All the time these papers were opening, I was wondering what this gentleman could be. I read, and stared, and read again. I was struck not less by the novelty than the audacity of the thing. "So then," said I, breaking silence, "your sovereign, after taxing you to your ruin, "has been graciously pleased to give you credentials " to show, that he authorizes you to beg in America; " and, not only for yourself but for others; so that you " are an accredited ambassador from the beggars in "Sardinia!" He found he was got into wrong hands: and endeavoured to put an end to the negociation at once, by observing, that I was not forced to give, and that my simple negative was enough. " I beg your " pardon, Sir," said I, " you have submitted your case " to me; you have made an appeal to me; your state-" ment contains reasons for my giving; and that gives " me a right to shew, if I can, why I ought not to give." He then, in order to prevent all reasoning, opened his Subscription, or Begging-book, and said: "you see. "Sir, others give!" "Now," said I, "You reason, but " your reasoning is defective; for, if you were to shew " me, that you had robbed all my neighbours without "their resenting it, would it follow that I must let you " rob me too ?" " Ah! par bleu," said he, snatching up his credentials, " je vois que vous êtes un avare." -Ah! by Old Nick, I see you are a Miser .- And of he went; not, however, before I had time to tell him to be sure to give my best respects to the king of Sardinia, and to tell His Majesty to keep his beggars at home.

395. I afterwards found, that cases like this are by no means rare; and that, in Pennsylvania, in particular they have accredited beggars from all parts of the continent of Europe. This may be no unuseful hint for the

English Boroughmongers, who have an undoubted claim to precedence before the German and Italian beggars. The Boroughmongers may easily add a legation of mendicity to their Envoyships and Consulships, without any great disgrace to the latter; and, since they can get nothing out of America by bullying and attacking, try what can be gained by canting and begging. The chances are, however, that many of them will, before they die, be beggars in their own proper persons and for their own use and behoof; and thus give a complete rounding to their career; plunderers in prosperity, and

beggars in adversity.

must look to the country. In England the poor-rates equal in amount the rent of the land! Here, I pay, in poor-rates, only seven dollars upon a rent of six hundred! And I pay my full share. In short, how is it possible, that there should be paupers to any amount, where the common average wages of a labourer are six dollars a week; that is to say, twenty-seven shillings sterling, and where the necessaries of life are, upon an average, of half the price that they are in England? How can a man be a pauper, where he can earn ten pounds of prime hog-meat a day, six days in every week! I was at a horse-race, where I saw at least five thousand men,

and not one man in shabby clothes.

397. But, some go back after they come from England; and the Consul at New York has thousands of applications from men who want to go to Canada: and little bands of them go off to that fine country very often. These are said to be disappointed people. Yes, they expected the people at New York to come out in boats, I suppose, carry them on shore, and give up their dinners and beds to them! If they will work, they will soon find beds and dinners: if they will not, they ought to have none. What, did they expect to find here the same faces and the same posts and trees that they left behind them? Such foolish people are not worth notice. The lazy, whether male or female, all hate a government, under which every one enjoys his earnings, and no more. Low, poor and miserable as they may be, their principle is precisely the same as that of Boroughmongers, and

Priests: namely, to live without labour on the earning The desire to live thus is almost universal of others. but with sluggards, thieves, Boroughmongers, an Priests, it is a principle of action. Ask a Priest wh he is a Priest ! He will say (for he has vowed it on the Altar!) that he believes himself called by the Hol Ghost to take on him the care of souls. But, put the thing close to him; push him hard; and you will find was the benefice, the money and the tithes, that calle him. Ask him what he wanted them for. That h might live, and live, too, without work. Oh! this work It is an old saying, that, if the Devil find a fellow idle he is sure to set him to work; a saying the truth o which the Priests seem to have done their utmost t establish.

393. Of the goers back was a Mr. Onslow WAKE FORD, who was a coach-maker, some years, in Phila delphia, and who, having, from nothing hardly to begin with, made a comfortable fortune, went back about the time that I returned home. I met him, by accident, a Goodwood, in Sussex, in 1814. We talked about America. Said he, "I have often thought of the foolis " way, in which my good friend, North, and I used " talk about the happy state of England. The mone " that I have paid in taxes here, would have kept m " like a gentleman there. Why," added he, " if a la " bouring man here were seen having in his possession "the fowls and other things that labourers in Phila " delphia carry home from market, he would be stopped "in the street, and taken up on suspicion of being " thief; upon the supposition of its being impossible the " he could have come honestly by them." I told the story after I got home; and we read in the newspaper not long afterwards, that a Scotch Porter, in London who had had a little tub of butter sent him up from h relations, and who was, in the evening, carrying it from the vessel to his home, had actually been seized by the Police, lodged in prison all night, brought before th magistrate the next day, and not released until he ha produced witnesses to prove that he had not stolen thing, which was thought far too valuable for such man to come at by honest means! What a state

things must that be? What! A man in England taken up as a thief and crammed into prison, merely because

he was in possession of 20 pounds of butter!

399. Mr. Wakeford is, I dare say, alive. He is a very worthy man. He lives at Chichester. I appeal to him for the truth of the anecdote relating to him. As to the butter story, I cannot name the precise date; but, I seriously declare the fact to have been as I have related it. I told Mr. Wakeford, who is a very quiet man, that, in order to make his lot in England as good as it was in America, he must help us to destroy the Boroughmongers. He left America, he told me, principally in consequence of the loss of his daughter (an only child) at Philadelphia, where she, amongst hundreds and hundreds of others, fell before the desolating lancets of 1797, 1798 and 1799.

CHAP. XIV.

GOVERNMENT, LAWS, AND RELIGION.

400. Mr. Professor Christian, who has written great piles of Notes on Blackstone's Commentaries, and whose Notes differ from those of the Note-writers on the Bible, in this, that the latter only tend to add darkness to that which was sufficiently dark before, while the Professor's Notes, in every instance, without a single exception, labour most arduously, and not always without success, to render that obscure, which was before clear as the sun now is in Long Island, on this most beautiful fifth of December, 1818: this Professor, who, believe, is now a Judge, has, in his Note 126 on Book I, lrawn what he calls "a distinction" between Political and Civil Liberty, which distinction contains as to ideas, namer, and expressions, a complete specimen of what, it such a case, a writer ought to avoid.

L 2

401. Leaving definitions of this sort to such conceited bunglers as the Professor, I will just give a sketch (for it can be nothing more) of the Government

and Laws of this country.

402. The country is divided into States. Each of these States has its own separate government, consisting of a Governor, Legislative Body, and Judiciary Department. But, then there is a General Government, which is, in fact, the government of the whole nation; for, it alone can do any thing with regard to other nations. This General Government consists of a President, a Senate, a House of Representatives, all which together are called the Congress. The President is elected for four years, the Senate for four years, and the House of Representatives for two years.

403. In most of the State-Governments, the election is annual for the House of Representatives. In some the Governor and the Senate are elected for a longer period, not exceeding four years in any case. But, in some, the whole, Governor, Senate, and Representatives are elected ANNUALLY; and this last appears now to

be the prevailing taste.

404. The suffrage, or qualification of electors, it very various. In some States every free man; that is every man who is not bondman or slave, has a vote. It others, the payment of a tax is required. In others, a man must be worth a hundred pounds. In Virginia:

man must be a freeholder.

THAM, the new Mentor of the Westminster Telemachus knows about the political part of the American governments. Jerry, whose great, and, indeed, only argument in support of annual parliaments and universal suffrage is, that America is so happy under such a system, has if we were to own him, furnished our enemies with complete answer; for, they have, in order to silenchim, only to refer to the facts of his argument of happy experience. By silencing him, however, I do no mean the stopping of his tongue, or pen; for nothin but mortality will ever do that. This everlasting ball bler has aimed a sort of stiletto stroke at me; for who God knows, except it be to act a consistent pat, by en

deavouring to murder the man whom he has so frequently robbed, and whose facts and thoughts, though disguised and disgraced by the robber's quaint phraseology, constitute the better part of his book. Jerry, who was made a Reformer by PITT's refusal to give him a contract to build a penitentiary, and to make him prime administrator of penance, that is to say, Beggar-Whipper General, is a very proper person to be toasted by those, who have plotted and conspired against Major Cartwright. Mr. Brougham praises Jerry: that is enough! 406. In the four New England States, the qualification was a hundred pounds. But, one of those States, CONNECTICUT, has, to her great honour, recently set an example worthy of the imitation of the other three. A new constitution has, during this year, been formed in that State, according to which all the elections are to be annual; and, as to the suffrage, I will give it in the words of the instrument itself: " Every male white "citizen of the United States, who shall have gained a " settlement in this state, attained the age of twenty-one "years, and resided in the town (that is parish in the " English meaning) in which he may offer himself to be " admitted to the privilege of being an elector, at least " six months preceding, and have a freehold estate of " the yearly value of seven dollars in this State; -OR, " having been enrolled in the militia, shall have per-" formed military duty therein for the term of one year, " next preceding the time he shall offer himself for ad-" mission, or, being liable thereto, shall have been, by " authority of law, altogether excused therefrom ;-OR, " shall have paid a State Tax within the year next pre-" ceding the time he shall present himself for admis-" sion, and shall sustain a good moral character, shall,

"on his taking the oath prescribed, be an elector."

407. And then, the proof of bad moral character, is, "a conviction of bribery, forgery, perjury, duelling, "fraudulent bankruptcy, theft, or other offences, for "which an infamous punishment is inflicted." By forgery is not, of course, contemplated puff-out forgery; for that, as an act of resistance of oppression, is fully justifiable: it is not only not an immoral, but it is a meritorious act. The forgery here meant is for-

gery committed against honest men, who, when they "promise to pay," mean to pay, and do pay when called upon. "Bribery" is very properly set at the head of the disqualifications; but, what a nest of villains it would exclude in England! White men are mentioned, but, another clause admits all the Blacks now free, though it shuts out future comers of that colour, or of the yellow hue; which is perfectly just; for, Connecticut is not to be the receptacle of those, whom other States may choose to release from slavery, seeing

that she has now no slaves of her own.

408. Thus, then, this new Constitution; a constitution formed by the steadiest community in the whole world; a constitution dictated by the most ample experience, gives to the people, as to the three branches of the government (the Governor, Senate, and Representatives) precisely what we reformers in England ask as to only one branch out of the three. Whoever has a freehold worth a guinea and a half a year, though he pay no tax, and though he be not enrolled in the militia, has a vote. Whoever pays a tax, though he be not enrolled in the militia, and have no freehold, has a vote. Whoever is enrolled in the militia, though he have no freehold and pay no tax, has a vote. So that nothing but beggars, paupers, and criminals can easily be excluded; and, you will observe, if you please, Messieurs Boroughmongers, that the State taxes are all direct, and so contemptible in amount, as not to be, all taken together, enough to satisfy the maw of a single sinecure place-man in England; and that the Electors choose, and annually too, King, Lords, and Commons. Now, mind, this change has been deliberately made by the most deliberate people that ever lived on the earth. New England is called, and truly, "the Land of " Steady Habits;" but, a Connecticut man is said to be a "full-blooded Yankey," and Yankey means New Englander. So that, here are the steadiest of the steady adopting, after all their usual deliberation and precaution, in a time of profound tranquillity, and without any party spirit or delusion, the plan of us "wild and " mad" Reformers of Old England. Please God, I

will, before I go home, perform a pilgrimage into this State!

409. In Virginia, and the States where negro slavery exists, the slaves are reckoned amongst the population in apportioning the seats in the General Congress. So that, the slaves do not vote; but, their owners have votes for them. This is what Davis Giddy, Wilberforce, and the spawn of the Green Room, call virtual representation. And this, to be sure, is what Sir FRANCIS BURDETT, in his speech at the Reading Dinner, meant by universal INTERESTS! From universal suffrage, he came down to general suffrage: this was only nonsense; but, universal INTERESTS is downright borough-mongering. Well may he despair of doing any good in the House of Commons! "Universal interests" is the Virginian plan; and in that state of things, by no means unwise or unjust; for, it is easier to talk about freeing black slaves, then it is to do it. The planters in the Southern States are not to blame for having slaves, until some man will show how they are to get rid of them. No one has yet discovered the means. Virtual representation, or, in other words, Universal interests, is as good a thing as any one can devise for those States; and, if Sir Francis will but boldly declare, that the people of England must necessarily remain slaves, his joining of Davis Giddy and Canning, will be very consistent. Let him black the skins of the people of England, and honestly call a part of them his property, and then he will not add the meanest to the most dastardly apostacy.

410. The right of suffrage in America is, however, upon the whole, sufficient to guard the people against any general and long-existing abuse of power; for, let it be borne in mind, that here the people elect all the persons, who are to exercise power; while, even if our Reform were obtained, there would still be two branches out of the three, over whom the people would have no direct controul. Besides, in England, Ireland, and Scotland. there is an established Church; a richly endowed and powerful hierarchy; and this, which is really a fourth branch of the government, has nothing to resemble it in America. So that, in this country, the whole of the

Government may be truly said to be in the hands of the people. The people are, in reality as well as in

name, represented.

411. The consequences of this are, 1st, that, if those who are chosen do not behave well, they are not chosen a second time; 2nd, that there are no sinecure placemen and place women, grantees, pensioners without services, and big placemen who swallow the earnings of two or three thousand men each; 3rd, that there is no military staff to devour more than the whole of a government ought to cost; 4th, that there are no proud and insolent grasping Boroughmongers, who make the people toil and sweat to keep them and their families in luxury; 5th, that seats in the Congress are not like stalls in Smithfield, bought and sold, or hired out 6th, that the Members of Congress do not sell their votes at so much a vote; 7th, that there is no waste of the public money, and no expenses occasioned by the bribing of electors, or by the hiring of Spies and informers; 8th, that there are no shootings of the people, and no legal murders committed, in order to defend the government against the just vengeance of an oppressed and insulted nation. But, all is harmony. peace and prosperity. Every man is zealous in defence of the laws, because every man knows that he is governed by laws, to which he has really and truly given his assent.

of England is the Common Law of America. These States were formerly Colonies of England. Our Boroughmongers wished to tax them without their own convent. But, the Colonies, standing upon the ancient Laws of England, which say that no man shall be taxed without his own consent, resisted the Boroughmongers of that day; overcame them in war; cast off all dependence, and became free and independent States. But, the great man, who conducted that Revolution as well as the people in general, were too wise to cast off the excellent laws of their forefathers. They, therefore, declared, that the Common Law of England should remain, being subject to such modifications as might be necessary in the new circumstances in which

the people were placed. The Common Law means, the ancient and ordinary usages and customs of the land with regard to the means of protecting property and persons and of punishing crimes. This law is no written or printed thing. It is more ancient than books. It had its origin in the hearts of our forefathers, and it has lived in the hearts of their sons, from generation to generation. Hence it is emphatically called the law of the land. Juries, Judges, Courts of Justice, Sheriffs, Constables, Head-boroughs, Heywards, Justices of the Peace, and all their numerous and useful powers and authorities, make part of this Law of the Land. The Boroughmongers would fain persuade us, that it is they who have given us this Law, out of pure generosity. But, we should bear in mind, that this Law is more ancient, and far more ancient, than the titles of even the most ancient of their families. And, accordingly, when the present Royal Family were placed upon the throne, there was a solemn declaration by the Parliament in these words: "The Laws of England are the Birthright of the "People of England." The Boroughmongers, by giving new powers to Justices of the Peace and Judges, setting aside the trial by Jury in many cases, both of property and person, even before the present horrible acts; and by a thousand other means, have, by Acts of Parliament, greatly despoiled us of the Law of the Land; but, never have they given us any one good in addition to it.

413. The Americans have taken special care to prevent the like encroachments on their rights: so that, while they have Courts of Justice, Juries, Judges, Sheriffs, and the rest, as we have; while they have all the good part of the Laws now in force in England, they have none of the bad. They have none of that Statute Law of England, or Act of Parliament Law, which has robbed us of a great part, and the best part of our " Birthright."

414. It is, as I said before, not my intention to go much into particulars here; but, I cannot refrain from noticing, that the People of America, when they come to settle their new governments, took special care to

draw up specific Constitutions, in which they forbade any of their future law-makers to allow of any Titles of Nobility, any Privileged Class, any Established Church, or to pass any law to give to any body the power of imprisoning men otherwise than in due course of Common Law, except in cases of actual invasion open rebellion. And, though actual invasion took place several times during the late war; though the Capital city was in possession of our troops, no such law was passed. Such is the effect of that confidence, which a good and just government has in the people whom it

governs!

415. There is one more particular, as to the Laws of America, on which, as it is of very great importance, I think it right to remark. The uses, which have been made of the Law of Libel in England are well known. In the first place, the Common Law knows of no such offence as that of criminal libel, for which so many men have been so cruelly punished in The crime is an invention of late date. The Common Law punished men for breaches of the peace, but no words, whether written or spoken, can be a breach of the peace. But, then some Boroughmonger judges said, that words might tend to produce a breach of the peace; and that, therefore, it was criminal to use such words. This, though a palpable stretch of law, did, however, by usage, become law so far as to be acted upon in America as well as in England; and, when I lived in the State of PENNSYL-VANIA, eighteen years ago, the Chief Justice of that State, finding even this law not sufficiently large, gave it another stretch to make it fit me. Whether the Legislature of that State will repair this act of injustice and tyranny remains yet to be seen.

416. The State of New York, in which I now live, awakened, probably by the act of tyranny, to which I allude, has taken care, by an Act of the State, passed in 1805, to put an end to those attacks on the press by charges of constructive libel, or, at least, to make the law such, that no man shall suffer from the

preferring of any such charges unjustly.

417. The principal effect of this twisting of the law

was, that, whether the words published were true or false the crime of publishing was the same; because whether true or false, they tended to a breach of the peace! Nay, there was a Boroughmonger Judge in England, who had laid it down as law, that the truer the words were, the more criminal was the libel; because, said he, a breach of the peace was more likely to be produced by telling truth of a villain, than by telling falsehood of a virtuous man. In point of fact, this was true enough, to be sure; but what an infamous doctrine! What a base, what an unjust mind must

this man have had!

418. The State of New York, ashamed that there should any longer be room for such miserable quibbling; ashamed to leave the Liberty of the Press exposed to the changes and chances of a doctrine so hostile to common sense as well as to every principle of freedom, passed an Act, which makes the truth of any publication a justification of it, provided the publisher can shew, that the publication was made with good motives and justifiable ends; and who can possibly publish truth without being able to shew good motives and justifiable ends? To expose and censure tyranny profligacy, fraud, hypocrisy, debauchery, drunkenness: indeed, all sorts of wickedness and folly; and to do this in the words of truth, must tend, cannot fail to tend, to check wickedness and folly, and to strengthen and promote virtue and wisdom; and these, and these only, are the uses of the press. I know it has been said. for I have heard it said, that this is going too far; that it would tend to lay open the private affairs of families. And what then? Wickedness and folly should meet their due measure of censure, or ridicule, be they found where they may. If the faults of private persons were too trifling to deserve public notice, the mention of them would give the parties no pain, and the publisher would be despised for his tittle-tattle; that is all. And, if they were of a nature so grave as for the exposure of them to give the parties pain, the exposure would be useful, as a warning to others.

419. Amongst the persons whom I have heard express a wish, to see the press what they called free, and

at the same time to extend the restraints on it, with regard to persons in their private life, beyond the obligation of adherence to truth, I have never, that I know of, met with one, who had not some powerful motive of his own for the wish, and who did not feel that he had some vulnerable part about himself. The common observation of these persons, is, that public men are fair game. Why public men only? Is it because their wickedness and folly affect the public? And, how long has it been, I should be glad to know, since bad example in private life has been thought of no consequence to the public? The press is called "the guardian of the public morals;" but, if it is to meddle with none of the vices or follies of individuals in private life, how is it to act as the guardian of the morals of the whole community? A press perfectly free, reaches these vices, which the law cannot reach without putting too much power into the hands of the magistrate. Extinguish the press, and you must let the magistrate into every private house. The experience of the world suggests this remark; for, look where you will, you will see virtue in all the walks of life hand in hand with freedom of discussion, and vice hand in hand with censorships and other laws to cramp the press. England, once so free, so virtuous and so happy, has seen misery and crimes increase and the criminal laws multiply in the exact proportion of the increase of the restraints of the press and of the increase of the severity in punishing what are called libels. And, if this had not taken place it would have been very wonderful. Men who have the handling of the public money, and who know that the parliament is such as to be silenced, will be very apt to squander that money; this squandering causes heavy taxes; these produce misery amongst the greater number of the people; this misery produces crimes; to check these new penal laws are passed. Thus it is in England, where new hanging places, new and enlarged jails, prisons on the water, new modes of transporting, a new species of peace officers, a new species of Justices of the Peace, troops employed regularly in aid of the magistrate, and at last, spies and blood-money bands, all proclaim a real revolution

in the nature of the government. If the press had continued free, these sad effects of a waste of the public money never could have taken place; for, the wasters of that money would have been so exposed as to be unable to live under the odium which the exposure would have occasioned; and, if the parliament had not checked the waste and punished the wasters, the public indignation would have destroyed the parliament. But, with a muzzled press, the wasters proceeded with the consciousness of impunity. Say to any individual man when he is 20 years of age: "You shall do just what " you please with all the money of other people that you "can, by any means, all your life long, get into your " hands, and no one shall ever be permitted to make you " accountable, or even to write or speak a word against "you for any act of fraud, oppression, or waste." Should you expect such an individual to act honestly and wisely? Yet, this, in fact, is what a Boroughmonger Parliament and the new Law of Libel say to every set of Ministers.

420. Before I quit this subject of Libel, let me observe, however, that no juryman, even as the law now stands in England, is in conscience bound to find any man guilty on a charge of criminal libel, unless the evidence prove that the pretended libeller has been actuated by an evil motive, and unless it be also proved by evidence, that his words, spoken or written, were scandalous and malicious. Unless these things be clearly proved by evidence, the juryman, who finds a man guilty, is a base, perjured villain; and ought to

be punished as such.

421. The State of Connecticut, in her new Constitution, before mentioned, has put this matter of libel on the true footing; namely; "In all prosecutions and "indictments for libel the TRUTH may be given in "evidence, and the Jury shall have the right to determine "the law and the facts." Thus, then, common sense has, at last, got the better; and TRUTH can, in this State, at least, in no case, be a legal crime. But, indeed, the press has NOW no restraint in America, other than that imposed by TRUTH. Men publish what they please, so long as they do not publish falsehoods; and, even in such cases; they are generally punished by the

public contempt. The press is, therefore, taken altogether, what the magistrate always ought to be: "a "terror to evil doers, and a reward to those who do well." But, it is not the name of REPUBLIC that secures these, or any other of the blessings of freedom. As gross acts of tyranny may be committed, and as base corruption practised, under that name as under the name of absolute monarchy. And, it becomes the people of America to guard their minds against ever being, in any case, amused with names. It is the fair representation of the people that is the cause of all the good; and, if this be obtained, I, for my part, will never quarrel with any body about names.

422. Taxes and Priests; for these always lay on heavily together. On the subject of taxes, I have; perhaps, spoken sufficiently clear before; but, it is a great subject. I will, on these subjects, address myself more immediately to my old neighbours at Botley, and endeavour to make them understand, what America

is as to taxes and priests.

423. Worried, my old neighbours, as you are by tax-gatherers of all descriptions from the County-Collector, who rides in his coach and four, down to the petty Window-Peeper, the little miserable spy, who is constantly on the look out for you, as if he were a thief-catcher and you were thieves; devoured as you are by these vermin, big and little, you will with difficulty form an idea of the state of America in this respect. It is a state of such blessedness, when compared with the state of things in England, that I despair of being able to make you fully comprehend what it is. Here a man may make new windows, or shut up old windows, as often as he pleases, without being compelled under a penalty to give notice to some insolent tax-gathering spy. Here he may keep as many horses as he likes, he may ride them or drive them at his pleasure, he may sell them or keep them, he may lend them or breed from them; he may, as far as their nature allows, do the same with regard to his dogs; he may employ his servants in his house, in his stables, in his garden, or in his fields, just as he pleases; he may, if he be foolish enough, have armorial bearings on his carriage, his watch-seals, on his plate and, if he likes, on his

very buckets and porridge pots; he may write his receipts, his bills, his leases, his bonds, and deeds upon unstamped paper; his wife and daughters may wear French gloves and Lace and French and India silks; he may purchase or sell lands and may sue at law for his rights: and all these, and a hundred other things, without any dread of the interloping and insolent interference of a tax-gatherer or spy of any description. Lastly, when he dies, he can bequeath his money and goods and houses and lands to whomsoever he pleases; and he can close his eyes without curses in his heart against a rapacious band of placemen, pensioners, grantees, sinecure holders, staff-officers, borough-jobbers, and blood-money spies, who stand ready to take from his friends, his relations, his widow, and his children, a large part of what he leaves, under the

name of a tax upon legacies.

424. But you will ask, " are there no taxes in "America?" Yes; and taxes, or public contributions of some sort, there must be in every civilized state; otherwise government could not exist, and without government there could be no security for property or persons. The taxes in America consist principally of custom duties imposed on goods imported into the country. During the late war, there were taxes on several things in the country; but they were taken off at the peace. In the cities and large towns, where paving and lamps and drains and scavengers are necessary, there are, of course, direct contributions to defray the expense of these. There are also, of course, county rates and road rates. But, as the money thus raised is employed for the immediate benefit of those who pay, and is expended amongst themselves and under their own immediate inspection, it does not partake of the nature of a tax. The taxes or duties, on goods imported, yield a great sum of money; and, owing to the persons employed in the collection being appointed for their integrity and ability, and not on account of their connection with any set of bribing and corrupt boroughmongers, the whole of the money thus collected is fairly applied to the public use, and is amply sufficient for all the purposes

of government. The army, if it can be so called, costs but a mere trifle. It consists of a few men, who are absolutely necessary to keep forts from crumbling down, and guns from rotting with rust. The navy is an object of care, and its support and increase a cause of considerable expense. But the government, relying on the good sense and valour of a people, who must hate or disregard themselves before they can hate or disregard that which so manifestly promotes their own happiness, has no need to expend much on any species of warlike preparations. The government could not stand a week, if it were hated by the people; nor, indeed, ought it to stand an hour. It has the hearts of the people with it, and, therefore, it need expend nothing in blood-money, or in secret services of any kind. Hence the cheapness of this government; hence the small amount of the taxes; hence the ease and happi-

ness of the People.

425. Great as the distance between you and me is, my old neighbours, I very often think of you; and especially when I buy salt, which our neighbour Warner used to sell us for 19s. a bushel, and which I buy here for 2s. 6d. This salt is made, you know, down somewhere by Hambel. This very salt; when brought here from England, has all the charges of freight, insurance, wharfage, storage, to pay. It pays besides, one third of its value in duty to the American Government before it be landed here. Then, you will observe, there is the profit of the American Salt Merchant, and then that of the shopkeeper who sells me the salt. And, after all this, I buy that very Hampshire salt for 2s. 6d. a bushel, English measure. What a government, then, must that of the Boroughmongers be! The salt is a gift of God. It is thrown on the shore. And yet, these tyrants will not suffer us to use it, until we have paid them 15s. a bushel for liberty to use it. They will not suffer us to use the salt, which God has sent us, until we have given them 15s. a bushel for them to bestow on themselves, on their families and dependents, in the payment of the interest of the Debt, which they have contracted, and in paying those, whom they hire to shoot at us. Yes; England

is a fine country; it is a glorious country; it contains an ingenious, industrious, a brave and warm-hearted people; but, it is now disgraced and enslaved: it is trodden down by these tyrants; and we must free it.

We cannot, and we will not die their slaves.

426. Salt is not the only one of the English articles that we buy cheaper here than in England. Glass, for instance, we buy for half the price that you buy it. The reason is, that you are compelled to pay a heavy tax, which is not paid by us for that same glass. It is the same as to almost every thing that comes from England. You are compelled to pay the Boroughmongers a heavy tax on your candles and soap. You dare not make candles and soap, though you have the fat and the ashes in abundance. If you attempt to do this, you are taken up and imprisoned; and, if you resist, soldiers are brought to shoot you. This is freedom, is it? Now, we kere, make our own candles and soap. Farmers sometimes sell soap and candles; but they never buy any. A labouring man, or a mechanic, bays a sheep now and then. Three or four days' work will buy a labourer a sheep to weigh sixty pounds, with seven or eight pounds of loose fat. meat keeps very well, in winter, for a long time. wool makes stockings. And the loose fat is made into candles and soap. The year before I left Hampshire, a poor woman at Holly Hill had dipped some rushes in grease to use instead of candles. An Exciseman found it out; went and ransacked her house; and told her, that, if the rushes had had another dip, they would have been candles, and she must have gone to jail! Why, my friends, if such a thing were told here, nobody would believe it. The Americans could not bring their minds to believe, that Englishmen would submit to such atrocious, such degrading tyranny.

427. I have had living with me an Englishman, who smokes tobacco; and he tell me, that he can buy as much tobacco here for three cents; that is, about three English half-pence, as he could buy in England for three shillings. The leather has no tax on it here; so that, though the shoe-maker is paid a high price for his labour, the labouring man gets his shoes very

cheap. In short, there is no excise here; no property tax; no assessed taxes. We have no such men here as Chiddel and Billy Tovery to come and take our money from us. No window peepers. No spies to keep a look-out as to our carriages and horses and dogs. Our dogs that came from Botley now run about free from the spying of tax-gatherers. We may wear hair-powder if we like without paying for it, and a boy in our houses may whet our knives without our paying

two pounds a year for it.

428. But, then, we have not the honour of being covered over with the dust, kicked up by the horses and raised by the carriage-wheels of such men as Old GEORGE ROSE and OLD GARNIER, each of whom has pocketted more than three hundred thousand pounds of the public, that is to say, the people's money. There are no such men here. Those who receive public monev here, do something for it. They earn it. They are no richer than other people. The Judges here are plain dressed men. They go about with no sort of parade. They are dressed, on the Bench, like other The lawyers the same. Here are no black gowns and scarlet gowns and big foolish-looking wigs. Yet, in the whole world, there is not so well-behaved so orderly, so steady a people; a people so obedient to the law. But, it is the law only that they will bow to. They will bow to nothing else. And, they bow with reverence to the law, because they know it to be just, and because it is made by men, whom they have all had a hand in choosing.

429. And, then, think of the tithes! I have talked to several farmers here about the tithes in England, and, they laugh. They sometimes almost make me angry; for they seem, at last, not to believe what I say, when I tell them, that the English farmer gives, and is compelled to give, the Parson a tenth part of his whole crop and of his fruit and milk and eggs and calves and lambs and pigs and wool and honey. They cannot believe this. They treat it as a sort of romance. I sometimes almost wish them to be farmers in England. I said to a neighbour the other day, in half anger: "I wish your farm were at Botley. There is a fellow

"there, who would soon let you know, that your fine "apple-trees do not belong to you. He would have his nose in your sheep-fold, your calf-pens, your milk-" pails, your sow's bed, if not in the sow herself. Your "daughters would have no occasion to hunt out the "hen's nests: he would do that for them." And then I gave them a proof of an English Parson's vigilance by telling them the story of Baker's peeping out the name, marked on the sack, which the old woman was wearing as a petticoat. To another of my neighbours, who is very proud of the circumstance of his grandfather being an Englishman, as, indeed, most of the Americans are, who are descended from Englishmen: to this neighbour I was telling the story about the poor woman at Holly Hill, who had nearly dipped her rushes once too often. He is a very grave and religious man. He looked very seriously at me, and said, that falsehood was falsehood, whether in jest or earnest. But, when I invited him to come to my house, and told him, that I would show him the acts which the Borough-men had made to put us in jail if we made our own soap and candles, he was quite astonished. "What!" said he, and is Old England really come to this! Is the land of our forefathers brought to this state of abject sla-"very! Well, Mr. Cobbett, I confess, that I was always " for King George, during our Revolutionary war; but, I believe, all was for the best; for, if I had had my "wishes, he might have treated us as he now treats "the people of England." "He!" said I. "It is " not he; he, poor man, does nothing to the people, " and never has done any thing to the people. He has " no power more than you have. None of his family " have any. All put together, they have not a thou-" sandth part so much as I have; for I am able, though "here, to annoy our tyrants, to make them less easy "than they would be; but, these tyrants care no more " for the Royal Family than they do for so many posts " or logs of wood." And then I explained to him who and what the Boroughmongers were, and how they oppressed us and the king too. I told him how they disposed of the Church livings, and, in short, explained to him all their arts and all their cruelties. He was

exceedingly shocked; but was glad, at any rate to know the truth.

430. When I was, last winter, in the neighbourhood of Harrisburgh in Pennsylvania, I saw some hopplanters. They grow prodigious quantities of hops. They are obliged to put their hills so wide a part, that they can have only four hundred hills upon an acre; and yet they grow three thousand pounds of hops upon an acre, with no manure and with once ploughing in the year. When I told them about the price of hops in England and about the difficulty of raising them, they were greatly surprised; but, what was their astonishment, when I told them about the hop-poles of CHAL-CRAFT at Curbridge! The hop is naturally a weed in England as well as in America. Two or three vines had come up out of Chalcraft's garden hedge, a few years ago. Chalcraft put poles to them; and, there might be a pound or two of hops on these poles. Just before the time of gathering, one of the spies called Excisemen called on Chalcraft and asked him why he did not enter his hops. Chalcraft did not understand; but, answered, he meant to take them in shortly, though he did not think they were yet quite ripe. "Aye," said the Exciseman, "but I mean, when do you mean " to enter them at the excise office?" Chalcraft did not know (not living in a hop-country,) that he had already incurred a penalty for not reporting to the tyrants that he had hops growing in his garden hedge! He did not know, that he could not gather them and put them by without giving notice, under a penalty of fifty pounds. He did not know, that he could not receive this little gift of God without paying money to the Boroughmongers in the shape of tax; and, to the Parson in the shape of tithe, or, to give a tenth of the hops to the Parson, and not dare pick a single hop till he had sent notice to the Parson! What he did, upon this occasion, I have forgotten; but, it is likely that he let the hops stand and rot, or cut them down and flung them away as weeds. Now, poor men in England are told to be content with rags and hungry bellies, for that is their lot; that " it " has pleased Divine Providence to place them in that " state." But, here is a striking instance of the false

hood and blasphemy of this Doctrine; for, Providence had sent Chalcraft the hops, and he had put poles to them. Providence had brought the hops to perfection; but then came the Boroughmongers and the Parson to take from this poor man this boon of a benevolent What, did God order a tax with all its vexatious regulations, to be imposed upon what he had freely given to this poor man? Did God ordain that, in addition to this tax, a tenth should be yielded to a Parson, who had solemnly vowed at his ordination, that he believed himself called, not by the love of tithes, but by " the Holy Ghost, to take on him the cure of souls," and to " bring stray sheep into the fold of the Lord?" Did God ordain these things? Had it pleased God to do this? What impunity, what blasphemy, then, to ascribe to Providence the manifold sufferings occasioned by the Boroughmongers' taxes and Parsons' tithes!

431. But, my Botley neighbours, you will exclaim, " No tithes! Why, then, there can be no Churches " and no Parsons! The people must know nothing of "God or Devil; and must all go to hell!" By no means, my friends. Here are plenty of Churches. No less than three Episcopal (or English) Churches; three Presbyterian Churches; three Lutheran Churches; one or two Quaker Meeting-houses; and two Methodist Places; all within six miles of the spot where I am sitting. And, these, mind, not poor shabby Churches; but each of them larger and better built and far handsomer than Botley Church, with the Church-yards all kept in the neatest order, with a head-stone to almost every grave. As to the Quaker Meeting-house it would take Botley Church into its belly, if you were first to knock off the steeple.

432. Oh, no! Tithes are not necessary to promote religion. When our Parsons, such as Baker, talk about religion, or the church, being in danger; they mean, that the tithes are in danger. They mean, that they are in danger of being compelled to work for their bread. This is what they mean. You remember, that, at our last meeting at Winchester, they proposed for us to tell the Prince Regent, that we would support the Church, I moved, to leave out the word church, and

insert the word tithes; for, as there were many presbyterians and other dissenters present, they could not with clear consciences, pledge themselves to support the church. This made them furious. It was lifting up the mask; and the parsons were enraged beyond measure.

433. Oh, no! Tithes do not mean religion. Religion means a reverence for God. And, what has this to do with tithes? Why cannot you reverence God, without Baker and his wife and children eating up a tenth parof the corn and milk and eggs and lambs and pigs and calves that are produced in Botley parish? The Parsons, in this country, are supported by those who choose to employ them. A man belongs to what congregation he pleases. He pays what is required by the rules of the congregation. And, if he think that it is not necessary for him to belong to any congregation, he pays nothing at all. And, the consequence is, that all is harmony and good neighbourhood. Here are not disputes about religion: or, if there be, they make no noise Here is no ill-will on this account. A man is never asked what religion he is of, or whether he be of any religion at all. It is a matter that nobody interferes in What need, therefore, is there of an established Church What need is there of tithes? And, why should not that species of property be taken for public use? That is to say, as far as it has any thing to do with religion? 1 know very well, that tithes do not operate as many people pretend; I know that those who complain mos about them have the least right to complain; but, for my present purpose, it is sufficient to shew, that they have nothing to do with religion.

derly, criminal people, and, of course, a miserable and foolish people: then we might doubt upon the subject then we might possibly suppose, that their wickedness and misery arose, in some degree, at least, from the want of tithes. But, the contrary is the fact. They are the most orderly, sensible, and least criminal people in the whole world. A common labouring man has the feelings of a man of honour; he never thinks of violating the laws; he crawls to nobody; he will call every man Sir, but he will call no man master. When he

utters words of respect towards any one, they do not proceed from fear or hope, but from civility and sincerity. A native American labourer is never rude to-

wards his employer, but he is never cringing.

435. However, the best proof of the inutility of an established Church is the absence of crimes in this country, compared to the state of England in that respect. There have not been three felonies tried in this country since I arrived in it. The Court-house is at two miles from me. An Irishman was tried for forgery in the summer of 1817, and the whole country was alive to go and witness the novelty. I have not heard of a man being hanged in the whole of the United States since my arrival. The Boroughmongers, in answer to statements like these, say that this is a thinly inhabited country. This very country is more thickly settled than Hampshire. The adjoining country, towards the city of New York is much more thickly settled than Hampshire. New York itself and its immediate environs contain nearly two hundred thousand inhabitants, and after London, is, perhaps, the first commercial and maritime city in the world. Thousands of sailors, shipcarpenters, dock-yard people, dray-men, boat-men, crowd its wharfs and quays. Yet, never do we hear of hanging; scarcely ever of a robbery; men go to bed with scarcely locking their doors; and never is there seen in the streets what is called in England, a girl of the town; and, what is still more, never is there seen in those streets a beggar. I wish you, my old neighbours, could see this city of New York. Portsmouth and Gosport, taken together, are miserable holes compared to it. Man's imagination can fancy nothing so beautiful as its bay and port, from which two immense rivers sweep up on the sides of the point of land, on which the city is. These rivers are continually covered with vessels of various sizes bringing the produce of the land, while the bay is scarcely less covered with ships going in and out from all parts of the world. The city itself is a scene of opulence and industry; riches without insolence, and labour without grudging.

436. What Englishman can contemplate this brilliant sight without feeling some little pride that this city bears an English name? But, thoughts of more importance ought to fill his mind. He ought to contrast the ease, the happiness, the absence of crime which prevail here with the incessant anxieties, the miseries and murderous works in England. In his search after causes he will find them no where but in the government: and, as to an established church, if he find no sound argument to prove it to be an evil; at the very least he must conclude, that it is not a good: and, of course, that property to the amount of five millions a-year is very unjustly as

well as unwisely bestowed on its clergy.

437. Nor, let it be said, that the people here are of a better natural disposition than the people of England are. How can it be? They are, the far greater part of them, the immediate descendants of Englishmen, Irishmen, and Scotsmen. Nay, in the city of New York it is supposed, that full half of the labour is performed by natives of Ireland, while men of that Island make a great figure in trade, at the bar, and in all the various pursuits of life. They have their Romish Chapels there in great brilliancy; and they enjoy "Catholic Eman-" cipation" without any petitioning or any wrangling. In short, blindfold an Englishman and convey him to New York, unbind his eyes, and he will think himself in an English city. The same sort of streets; shops precisely the same; the same beautiful and modest women crowding in and out of them; the same play-houses; the same men, same dress, same language: he will miss by day only the nobility and the beggars, and by night only the street-walkers and pickpockets. These are to be found only where there is an established clergy, upheld by what is called the state, and which word means, in England, the Boroughmongers.

438. Away, then, my friends, with all cant about the church, and the church being in danger. If the church, that is to say, the tithes, were completely abolished; it they, and all the immense property of the church, were taken and applied to public use, there would not be a sermon or a prayer the less. Not only the Bible but the very Prayer-book is in use here as much as in England, and, I believe, a great deal more. Why give the five millions a year then, to Parsons and their wives and

children? Since the English, Irish, and Scotch, are so good, so religious, and so moral here without glebes and tithes; why not use these glebes and tithes for other purposes, seeing they are possessions which can legally

be disposed of in another manner?

439. But, the fact is, that it is the circumstance of the church being established by law that makes it of little use as to real religion, and as to morals, as far as they be connected with religion. Because, as we shall presently see, this establishment forces upon the people, parsons whom they cannot respect, and whom indeed, they must despise; and, it is easy to conceive, that the moral precepts of those, whom we despise on account of their immorality, we shall never much attend to, even supposing the precepts themselves to be good. If a precept be self-evidently good; if it be an obvious duty which the parson inculcates, the inculcation is useless to us, because, whenever it is wanted to guide us, it will occur without the suggestion of any one; and, if the precept be not self-evidently good, we shall never receive it as such from the lips of a man, whose character and life tell us we ought to suspect the truth of every thing he utters. When the matters as to which we are receiving instructions are, in their nature, wholly dissimilar to those as to which we have witnessed the conduct of the teacher, we may reasonably, in listening to the precept, disregard that conduct. Because, for instance, a man, though a very indifferent Christian, may be a most able soldier, seaman, physician, lawyer, or almost any thing else; and what is more, may be honest and zealous in the discharge of his duty in any of these several capacities. But, when the conduct, which we have observed in the teacher belongs to the same department of life as the precept which he is delivering, if the one differ from the other we cannot believe the teacher to be sincere, unless he, while he enforces his precept 'upon us, acknowledge his own misconduct. Suppose me, for instance, to be a great liar, as great a liar, if possible, as STEWART of the COURIER, who has said that I have been "fined 700 dollars for writing "against the American government," though I never was prosecuted in America in all my life. Suppose me

to be as great a liar as STEWART, and I were to be told by a parson, whom I knew to be as great a liar as myself, that I should certainly go to hell if I did not leave off lying. Would his words have any effect upon me? No: because I should conclude, that if he thought what he said, he would not be such a liar himself. should rely upon the parson generally, or I should not. If I did, I should think myself safe until I out-lied him; and, if I did not rely on him generally, of what use would he be to me?

440. Thus, then, if men be sincere about religion; it it be not all a mere matter of form, it must always be of the greatest consequence, that the example of the teacher correspond with his teaching. And the most likely way to insure this, is to manage things so that he may, in the first place, be selected by the people, and in the second place, have no rewards in view other than those which are to be given in consequence of his per-

severance in a line of good conduct.

441. And thus it is with the clergy in America, who are duly and amply rewarded for their diligence, and very justly respected for the piety, talent, and zea which they discover; but, who have no tenure of their places other than that of the will of the congregation Hence it rarely indeed happens, that there is seen amongst them an impious, an immoral, or a despicable man. Whether the teaching of even these Reverence persons have any very great effect in producing virtue and happiness amongst men, is a question upon which men may, without deserving to be burnt alive, take the liberty to differ; especially since the world has constantly before its eyes a society, who excel in all the Christian virtues, who practise that simplicity which others teach, who, in the great work of charity, reall and truly hide from the left hand that which the right hand doeth; and who know nothing of Bishop, Priest Deacon, or Teacher of any description. Yes, since w have the Quakers constantly before our eyes, we may without deserving to be burnt alive, question the utilit of paying any parsons or religious teachers at all. Bu the worst of it is, we are apt to confound things; as w have, by a figure of speech, got to call a building

church, when a church really means a body of people; so we are apt to look upon the priest as being religious, and especially when we call him the reverend; and, it often sadly occurs that no two things can be wider from each other in this quality. Some writer has said, that he would willingly leave to the clergy every thing above the tops of the chimneys; which, perhaps, was making their possessions rather too ethereal; but, since our law calls them "spiritual persons;" since they profess, that "their kingdom is not of this world," and, since those of our church have solemnly declared, that they believed themselves to be called to the ministry "by the Holy "Ghost:" it is, I think, a little out of character for them to come poking and grunting and grumbling about

after our eggs, potatoes, and sucking pigs.

442. However, upon the general question of the utility or non-utility of paid religious teachers, let men decide for themselves; but if teachers be to be paid, it seems a clear point, in my mind, that they should be paid upon the American plan: and this, I think, must be obvious to every one, who is able to take a view of the English Clergy. They are appointed by the absolute will of the Boroughmongers. They care nothing for the good will of their congregation or parish. It is as good to them to be hated by their parishioners as to be loved by them. They very frequently never even see their parish more than once in four or five years. They solemnly declare at the altar, that they believe themselves called by the Holy Ghost to take on them the cure of souls; they get possession of a living; and leave the cure of souls to some curate, to whom they give a tenth part, perhaps, of the income. Many of them have two livings, at thirty miles distance from each other. They live at neither very frequently; and, when they do, they only add to the annoyance which their curate gives.

443. As to their general character and conduct; in what public transaction of pre-eminent scandal have they not taken a part? Who were found most intimate with Mrs. CLARKE, and most busy in her commission dealing affairs? Clergymen of the Church of England. This is notorious. Miss Tocker tells of the two livings

given to Parson Gurney for his electioneering works in Cornwall. And, indeed, all over the country, they have been and are the prime agents of the Boroughmongers. Recently they have been the tools of Sidmouth for gagging the press in the country parts of the kingdom. Powis and Guillim were the prosecutors of Messrs Pilling and Melor; and for which if they be not made to answer, the kingdom ought to be destroyed. They are the leading men at Pitt Clubs all over the country; they were the foremost to defend the peculation of Melville. In short, there has been no public man guilty of an infamous act, of whom they have not taken the part; and no act of tyranny of which they have not been the eulogists and the principal instrument.

444. But, why do I attempt to describe Parsons to Hampshire men? You saw them all assembled in grand cohort the last time that I saw any of you. You saw them at Winchester, when they brought forward their lying address to the Regent. You saw them on that day, and so did I; and in them I saw a band of more complete blackguards than I ever before saw in all my life. I then saw Parson Baines of Exton, standing up in a chair and actually spitting in Lord Cochrane's poll, while the latter was bending his neck out to speak. Lord Cochrane looked round and said, "By G-Sir, "if you do that again I'll knock you down." "You "be d-d," said Baines, "I'll spit where I like." Lord Cochrane struck at him; Baines jumped down, put his two hands to his mouth in a huntsman-like way, and cried "whoop! whoop!" till he was actually black in the face. One of them trampled upon my heel as I was speaking. I looked round, and begged him to leave off. "You be d-d," said he, "you be d-d, Jacobin." He then tried to press on me, to stifle my voice, till I clapped my elbow into his ribs and made " the spiritual " person" hiccup. There were about twenty of them mounted upon a large table in the room; and there they jumped, stamped, hallooed, roared, thumped with canes and umbrellas, squalled, whistled, and made all sorts of noises. As Lord Cochrane and I were going back to London, he said that, so many years as he had

been in the navy, he never had seen a band of such complete blackguards. And I said the same for the army. And, I declare, that, in the whole course of my life, I have never seen any men, drunk or sober, behave in so infamous a manner. Mr. PHILLIPS, of Eling, (now Doctor Phillips) whom I saw standing in the room, I tapped on the shoulder, and asked, whether he was not ashamed. Mr. LEE, of the College; Mr. OGLE, of Bishop's Waltham; and Doctor Hill, of Southampton: these were exceptions. Perhaps there might be some others; but the mass was the most audacious, foul, and atrocious body of men I ever saw. We had done nothing to offend them. We had proposed nothing to offend them in the smallest degree. But, they were afraid of our speeches: they knew they could not answer us; and they were resolved, that, if possible, we should not be heard. There was one parson, who had his mouth within a foot of Lord Cochrane's ear, all the time his Lordship was speaking, and who kept on saying, "You lie! you lie! you lie!" as loud as he could utter the words.

445. BAKER, the Botley Parson, was extremely busy. He acted the part of buffoon to LOCKHART. He kept capering about behind him, and really seemed like a

merry andrew rather than a " spiritual person."

446. Such is the character of the great body of Hampshire Parsons. I know of no body of men so despicable, and yet, what sums of public money do they swallow! It now remains for me to speak more particularly of Baker, he who, for your sins I suppose, is fastened upon you as your Parson. But what I have to say of this man must be the subject of another Letter. That it should be the subject of any letter at all may well surprize all who know the man; for not one creature knows him without despising him. But, it is not Baker, it is the scandalous priest, that I strike at. It is the impudent, profligate, hardened priest that I will hold up to public scorn.

447. When I see the good and kind people here going to church to listen to some decent man of good moral character and of sober quiet life, I always think of you. You are just the same sort of people as they

what a difference between the sober, sedate, friendly man who preaches to one of these congregations, and the greedy, chattering, lying, backbiting, mischief-making, everlasting plague, that you go to hear, and are compelled to hear, or stay away from the church. Baker always puts me in mind of the Magpie.

The Magpie, bird of chatt'ring fame,
Whose tongue and hue bespeak his name;
The first a squalling clam'rous clack,
The last made up of white and black;
Feeder alike on flesh and corn,
Greedy alike at eve and morn;
Of all the birds the prying pest,
Must needs be Parson o'er the rest.

448. Thus I began a fable, when I lived at Botley. I have forgotten the rest of it. It will please you to hear that there are no Magpies in America; but, it will please you still more to hear, that no men that resemble them are parsons here. I have sometimes been half tempted to believe, that the Magpie first suggested to tyrants the idea of having a tithe-eating Clergy. The Magpie devours the corn and grain; so does the The Magpie takes the wool from the sheep's backs; so does the Parson. The Magpie devours alike the young animals and the eggs; so does the Parson. The Magpie's clack is everlastingly going; so is the Parson's. The Magpie repeats by rote words that are taught it; so does the Parson. The Magpie is always skipping and hopping and peeping into other's nests; so is the Parson. The Magpie's colour is partly black and partly white; so is the Parson's. The Magpie's greediness, impudence, and cruelty are proverbial; so are those of the Parson. I was saying to a farmer the other day, that if the Boroughmongers had a mind to ruin America, they would another time, send over five or six good large flocks of Magpies, instead of five or six of their armies; but, upon second thought, they would do the thing far more effectually by sending over five or six flocks of their Parsons, and getting the people to receive them and cherish them as the Bulwark of religion.

END OF PART II.

YEAR'S RESIDENCE,

IN THE

UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

PART III.

Containing, — Mr. Hulme's Introduction to his Journal — Mr. Hulme's Journal, made during a Tour in the Western Countries of America, in which Tour he visited Mr. Birkbeck's Settlement—Mr. Cobbett's Letters to Mr. Birkbeck, remonstrating with that Gentleman on the numerous delusions, contained in his two publications, entitled "Notes on a Journey in America" and "Letters from Illinois"—Postscript, being the detail of an experiment made in the cultivation of the Ruta Baga—Second Postscript, a Refutation of Fearon's Falsehoods.

DEDICATION To TIMOTHY BROWN, Esq.

OF PECKAM LODGE, SURREY.

North Hempstead, Long Island, 10th Dec. 1818.

MY DEAR SIR,

The little volume here presented to the public, consists, as you will perceive, for the greater and most valuable part, of travelling notes, made by our friend Hulme, whom I had the honour to introduce to you in 1816, and with whom you were so much pleased.

His activity, which nothing can benumb; his zeal against the twin monster, tyranny and priestcraft, which nothing can cool; and his desire to assist in providing a place of retreat for the oppressed, which nothing but the success in the accomplishment can satisfy; these have induced him to employ almost the whole of his time here in various ways all tending to the same point.

The Boroughmongers have agents and spies all over the inhabited globe. Here they cannot sell blood: they can only collect information and calumniate the people of both countries. These vermin our friend firks out (as the Hampshire people call it); and they hate him as rats hate a terrier.

Amongst his other labours, he has performed a very laborious journey to the Western Countries, and has been as far as the Colony of our friend BIRKBECK. This journey has produced a JOURNAL; and this Jour-

nal, along with the rest of the volume, I dedicate to you in testimony of my constant remembrance of the many, many happy hours I have spent with you, and of the numerous acts of kindness which I have received at your hands. You were one of those, who sought acquaintance with me, when I was shut up in a felon's jail for two years for having expressed my indignation at seeing Englishmen flogged, in the heart of England, under a guard of German bayonets and sabres, and when I had on my head a thousand pounds fine and seven years' recognizances. You, at the end of the two years, took me from the prison, in your carriage, home to your house. You and our kind friend, WALKER, are, even yet, held in bonds for my good behaviour, the seven years not being expired, All these things are written in the very core of my heart; and when I act as if I had forgotten any one of them, may no name on earth be so much detested and despised as that of

Your faithful friend,

or as the Coloux of our trient

And most obedient servant,

WM. COBBETT.

PREFACE

used, scoing that, of all the men I knew, he was

TO THE

THIRD PART.

449. In giving an account of the United States of America, it would not have been proper to omit saying something of the Western Countries, the Newest of the New Worlds, to which so many thousands and hundreds of thousands are flocking, and towards which the writings of Mr. Birkbeck have, of late, drawn the pointed attention of all those Englishmen, who, having something left to be robbed of, and wishing to preserve it, are looking towards America as a place of refuge from the Boroughmongers and the Holy Alliance, which latter, to make the compact complete, seems to want nothing but the accession of His Satanic Majesty.

450. I could not go to the Western Countries; and, the accounts of others were seldom to be relied on; because, scarcely any man goes thither without some degree of partiality, or comes back without being tainted with some little matter, at least, of self-interest. Yet, it was desirable to make an attempt, at least, towards settling the question: "Whether the Atlantic, "or the Western, Countries were the best for English "Farmers to settle in." Therefore, when Mr. HULME proposed to make a Western Tour, I was very much

pleased, seeing that, of all the men I knew, he was the most likely to bring us back an impartial account of what he should see. His great knowledge of farming as well as of manufacturing affairs; his capacity of estimating local advantages and disadvantages; the natural turn of his mind for discovering the means of applying to the use of man all that is furnished by the earth, the air, and water; the patience and perseverance with which he pursues all his inquiries; the urbanity of his manners, which opens to him all the sources of information: his inflexible adherence to truth: all these marked him out as the man, on whom the public might safely rely.

451. I, therefore, give his Journal, made during his tour. He offers no opinion as to the question above stated. That I shall do; and when the reader has gone through the Journal he will find my opinions as to that question, which opinions I have stated in a Letter, addressed to Mr. BIRKBECK.

452. The American reader will perceive, that this Letter is intended principally for the perusal of Englishmen; and, therefore, he must not be surprised if he find a little bickering in a group so much of a family cast.

WM. COBBETT,

North Hempstead, 19th December, 1818.

YEAR'S RESIDENCE,

&c.

INTRODUCTION TO THE JOURNAL.

Philadelphia, 30th Sept. 1818.

453. It seems necessary, by way of Introduction to the following *Journal*, to say some little matter respecting the author of it, and also respecting his motives for

wishing it to be published.

454. As to the first, I am an Englishman by birth and parentage; and am of the county of Lancaster. I was bred and brought up at farming work, and became an apprentice to the business of Bleacher, at the age of 14 years. My own industry made me a master-bleacher, in which state I lived many years at Great Lever, near Bolton, where I employed about 140 men, women, and children, and had generally about 40 apprentices. By this business, pursued with incessant application, I had acquired, several years ago, property to an amount sufficient to satisfy any man of moderate desires.

455. But, along with my money my children had come and had gone on increasing to the number of nine. New duties now arose, and demanded my best attention. It was not sufficient that I was likely to have a decent fortune for each child. I was bound to provide, if possible, against my children being stripped of what I had earned for them. I, therefore, looked seriously at the situation of England; and, I saw, that the incomes of my children were all pawned (as my friend Cobbett truly calls it) to pay the Debts of the Borough,

or seat, owners. I saw that, of whatever I might be able to give to my children, as well as of what they might be able to earn, more than one half would be taken away to feed pensioned Lords and Ladies, Soldiers to shoot at us, Parsons to persecute us, and Fundholders, who had lent their money to be applied to purposes of enslaving us. This view of the matter was sufficient to induce the father of nine children to think of the means of rescuing them from the consequences, which common sense taught him to apprehend. But, there were other considerations, which operated with me in

producing my emigration to America.

456. In the year 1811 and 1812 the part of the country, in which I lived, was placed under a new sort of law; or, in other words, it was placed out of the protection of the old law of the land. Men were seized, dragged to prison, treated like convicts, many transported and put to death, without having committed any thing, which the law of the land deems a crime. It was then that the infamous Spy-System was again set to work in Lancashire, in which horrid system FLETCHER of Bolton was one of the principal actors, or, rather, organizers and promoters. At this time I endeavoured to detect the machinations of these dealers in human blood; and, I narrowly escaped being sacrificed myself on the testimony of two men, who had their pardon offered them on condition of their swearing against me. The men refused, and were transported, leaving wives and children to starve.

457. Upon this occasion, my friend Doctor Taylor, most humanely, and with his usual zeal and talent, laboured to counteract the works of Fletcher and his associates. The Doctor published a pamphlet on the subject, in 1812, which every Englishman should read. I, as far as I was able, co-operated with him. We went to London, laid the real facts before several members of the two houses of Parliament; and, in some degree, checked the progress of the dealers in blood. I had an interview with Lord Holland, and told him, that, if he would pledge himself to cause the secret-service money to be kept in London, I would pledge myself for the keeping of the peace in Lancashire. In

short, it was necessary, in order to support the tyranny of the seat-sellers, that terror should prevail in the populous districts. Blood was wanted to flow; and money was given to spies to tempt men into what the new law had made crimes.

dren in such a state of things, unless I should be taken off very suddenly. I saw no hope of obtaining a Reform of the Parliament, without which it was clear to me, that the people of England must continue to work solely for the benefit of the great insolent families, whom I hated for their injustice and rapacity, and despised for their meanness and ignorance. I saw, in them, a mass of debauched and worthless beings, having at their command an army to compel the people to surrender to them the fruits of their industry; and, in addition, a body existing under the garb of religion, almost as despicable in point of character, and still more malignant.

459. I could not have died in peace, leaving my children the slaves of such a set of beings; and, I could not live in peace, knowing that, at any hour, I might die and so leave my family. Therefore I resolved, like the Lark in the fable, to remove my brood, which was still more numerous than that of the Lark. While the war was going on between England and America, I could not come to this country. Besides, I had great affairs to arrange. In 1816, having made my preparations, I set off, not with my family; for, that I did not think a prudent step. It was necessary for me to see what America really was. I, therefore, came for that purpose.

460. I was well pleased with America, over a considerable part of which I travelled. I saw an absence of human misery. I saw a government taking away a very, very small portion of men's earnings. I saw ease and happiness and a fearless utterance of thought every where prevail. I saw laws like those of the old laws of England, every where obeyed with cheerfulness and held in veneration. I heard of no mobs, no riots, no spies, no transportings, no hangings. I saw those very Irish, to keep whom in order, such murderous

laws exist in Ireland, here good, peaceable, industrious citizens. I saw no placemen and pensioners, riding the people under foot. I saw no greedy Priesthood, fattening on the fruits of labour in which they had never participated, and which fruits they seized in despite of the people. I saw a Debt, indeed, but then, it was so insignificant a thing; and, besides, it had been contracted for the people's use, and not for that of a set of tyrants, who had used the money to the injury of the people. In short, I saw a state of things, precisely the reverse of that in England, and very nearly what it would be in England, if the Parliament were reformed.

461. Therefore, in the Autumn of 1816, I returned to England fully intending to return the next spring with my family and whatever I possessed of the fruits of my labours, and to make America my country and the country of that family. Upon my return to England, however, I found a great stir about Reform; and, having, in their full force, all those feelings, which make our native country dear to us, I said, at once, " my desire is, not to change country or countrymen, " but to change slavery for freedom: give me freedom " here, and here I'll remain." These are nearly the very words that I uttered to Mr. Cobbett, when first introduced to him, in December, 1816, by that excellent man, Major Cartwright. Nor was I unwilling to labour myself in the cause of Reform. I was one of those very Delegates, of whom the Borough-tyrants said so many falsehoods, and whom SIR FRANCIS BUR-DETT so shamefully abandoned. In the meeting of Delegates, I thought we went too far in reposing confidence in him: I spoke my opinion as to this point: and, in a very few days, I had the full proof of the correctness of my opinion. I was present when Major CARTWRIGHT opened a letter from SIR FRANCIS, which had come from Leicestershire. I thought the kindhearted old Major would have dropped upon the floor! I shall never forget his looks as he read that letter. If the paultry Burdett had a hundred lives, the taking of them all away would not atone for the pain he that day gave to Major Cartwright, not to mention the pain

given to others, and the injury done to the cause. For my part, I was not much disappointed. I had no opinion of Sir Francis Burdett's being sound. He seemed to me too much attached to his own importance to do the people any real service. He is an aristocrat; and that is enough for me. It is folly to suppose, that such a man will ever be a real friend of the rights of the people. I wish he were here a little while. He would soon find his proper level; and that would not, I think, be very high. Mr. Hunt was very much against our confiding in BURDETT; and he was perfectly right. I most sincerely hope, that my countrymen will finally destroy the tyrants who oppress them; but, I am very sure, that, before they succeed in it, they must cure themselves of the folly of depending for assistance on the nobles or the half-nobles.

462. After witnessing this conduct in Burdett, I set off home, and thought no more about effecting a Reform. The Acts that soon followed were, by me, looked upon as matters of course. The tyranny could go on no longer under disguise. It was compelled to shew its naked face; but, it is now, in reality, not worse than it was before. It now does no more than rob the people, and that it did before. It kills more now out-right; but, men may as well be shot, or stabbed or hanged, as

starved to death.

463. During the Spring and the early part of the Summer, of 1817, I made preparations for the departure of myself and family, and when all was ready, I bid an everlasting adieu to Boroughmongers, Sinecure placemen and placewomen, pensioned Lords and Ladies, Standing Armies in time of peace, and (rejoice, oh! my children!) to a hireling, tithe-devouring Priesthood. We arrived safe and all in good health, and which health has never been impaired by the climate. We are in a state of ease, safety, plenty; and how can we help being as happy as people can be? The more I see of my adopted country, the more gratitude do I feel towards it for affording me and my numerous offspring protection from the tyrants of my native country. There I should have been in constant anxiety about my family. Here I am in none at all. Here I

am in fear of no spies, no false witnesses, no blood-money men. Here no fines, irons, or gallowses await me, let me think or say what I will about the government. Here I have to pay no people to be ready to shoot at me, or run me through the body, or chop me down. Here no vile Priest can rob me and mock me in the same breath.

464. In the year 1816 my travelling in America was confined to the Atlantic States. I there saw enough to determine the question of emigration or no emigration. But, a spot to settle on myself was another matter; for, though I do not know, that I shall meddle with any sort of trade, or occupation, in the view of getting money, I ought to look about me, and to consider soberly as to a spot to settle on with so large a family. It was right, therefore, for me to see the Western Countries. I have done this; and the particulars, which I thought worthy my notice, I noted down in a Journal, This Journal I now submit to the public. My chief motive in the publication is to endeavour to convey useful information, and especially to those persons, who may be disposed to follow my example, and to withdraw their families and fortunes from beneath the hoofs of the tyrants of England.

465. I have not the vanity to suppose myself eminently qualified for any thing beyond my own profession; but I have been an attentive observer; I have raised a considerable fortune by my own industry and economy; I have, all my life long, studied the matters connected with agriculture, trade, and manufactures. I had a desire to acquire an accurate knowledge of the Western Countries, and what I did acquire I have endeavoured to communicate to others. It was not my object to give flowery descriptions. I leave that to poets and painters. Neither have I attempted any general estimate of the means or manner of living, or getting money, in the West. But, I have contented myself with merely noting down the facts that struck me; and from those facts the reader must draw his conclusions.

466. In one respect I am a proper person to give an account of the Western Countries. I have no lands

there: I have no interest there: I have nothing to warp my judgment in favour of those countries: and yet, I have as little in the Atlantic States to warp my judgment in their favour. I am perfectly impartial in my feelings, and am, therefore, likely to be impartial in my words. My good wishes extend to the utmost boundary of my adopted country. Every particular part of it is

as dear to me as every other particular part.

467. I have recommended most strenuously the encouraging and promoting of Domestic Manufacture; not because I mean to be engaged in any such concern myself; for it is by no means likely that I ever shall; but, because I think that such encouragement and promotion would be greatly beneficial to America, and because it would provide a happy Asylum for my native, oppressed, and distressed countrymen, who have been employed all the days of their lives in manufactures in England, where the principal part of the immense profits of their labour is consumed by the Borough tyrants and their friends, and expended for the vile purpose of perpetuating a system of plunder and despotism at home, and all over the world.

468. Before I conclude this Introduction, I must observe, that I see with great pain, and with some degree of shame, the behaviour of some persons from England, who appear to think that they give proof of their high breeding by repaying civility, kindness, and hospitality, with reproach and insolence. However, these persons are despised. They produce very little impression here; and, though the accounts they send to England, may be believed by some, they will have little effect on persons of sense and virtue. Truth will make its way; and it is, thank God, now making its

way with great rapidity.

469. I could mention numerous instances of Englishmen, coming to this country with hardly a dollar in their pocket, and arriving at a state of ease and plenty and even riches in a few years; and I explicitly declare, that I have never known or heard of, an instance of one common labourer who, with common industry and economy, did not greatly better his lot. Indeed, how can it otherwise be, when the average wages of agri-

cultural labour is double what it is in England, and when the average price of food is not more than hal what it is in that country? These two facts, undeniable as they are, are quite sufficient to satisfy any man or sound mind.

470. As to the manners of the people, they are precisely to my taste: unostentatious and simple. Good sense I find every where, and never affectation. Kindness, hospitality and never-failing civility. I have travelled more than four thousand miles about this country; and I have never met with one single insolent or rude native American.

471. I trouble myself very little about the party politics of the country. These contests are the natural offspring of freedom; and, they tend to perpetuate that which produces them. I look at the people as a whole and I love them and feel grateful to them for having given the world a practical proof, that peace, social order, and general happiness can be secured, and bessecured, without Monarchs, Dukes, Counts, Baronets and Knights. I have no unfriendly feeling toward any Religious Society. I wish well to every member of every such Society; but, I love the Quakers, and feel grateful towards them, for having proved to the world, that all the virtues, public as well as private flourish most and bring forth the fairest fruits when unincumbered with those noxious weeds, hireling priests.

THOMAS HULME.

THE JOURNAL.

472. PITTSBURGH, June 3 .- Arrived here with a friend as travelling companion, by the mail stage from Philadelphia, after a journey of six days; having set out on the 28th May. We were much pleased with the face of the country, the greatest part of which was new to me. The route, as far as Lancaster, lay through a rich and fertile country, well cultivated by good, settled proprietors; the road excellent: smooth as the smoothest in England, and hard as those made by the cruel corvées in France. The country finer, but the road not always so good, all the way from Lancaster, by Little York, to Chambersburgh; after which it changes for mountains and poverty, except in timber. Chambersburgh is situated on the North West side of that fine valley which lies between the South and North Mountains, and which extends from beyond the North East boundary of Pennsylvania to nearly the South West extremity of North Carolina, and which has limestone for its bottom and rich and fertile soil, and beauty upon the face of it, from one end to the other. The ridges of mountains called the Allegany, and forming the highest land in North America between the Atlantic and Pacific oceans, begin here and extend across our route nearly 100 miles, or rather, three days, for it was no less than half the journey to travel over them; they rise one above the other as we proceed Westward, till we reach the Allegany, the last and most lofty of all, from which we have a view to the West farther than the eye can carry. I can say nothing in commendation of the road over these mountains, but I must admire the drivers, and their excellent horses. The road is every thing that is bad, but the skill of the drivers, and the well

constructed vehicles, and the capital old English horses, overcome every thing. We were rather singularly fortunate in not breaking down or upsetting; I certainly should not have been surprized if the whole thing, horses and all, had gone off the road and been dashed to pieces. A new road is making, however, and when that is completed, the journey will be shorter in point of time, just one half. A fine even country we get into immediately on descending the Allegany, with very little appearance of unevenness or of barrenness all the way to Pittsburgh; the evidence of good land in the crops, and the country beautified by a various mixture of woods and fields.

473. Very good accommodations for travellers the whole of the way. The stage stops to breakfast and to dine, and sleeps where it sups. They literally feasted us every where, at every meal, with venison and good meat of all sorts: every thing in profusion. In one point, however, I must make an exception, with regard to some houses: at night I was surprized, in taverns so well kept in other respects, to find bugs in the beds! I am sorry to say I observed (or, rather, felt,) this too often. Always good eating and drinking, but not al-

ways good sleeping.

474. June 4th and 5th.—Took a view of Pittsburgh. It is situated between the mouths of the rivers Allegany and Monongahela, at the point where they meet and begin the Ohio, and is laid out in a triangular form, so that two sides of it lie contiguous to the water. Called upon Mr. Bakewell, to whom we were introduced by letter, and who very obligingly satisfied our curiosity to see every thing of importance. After showing us through his extensive and well conducted glass works, he rowed us across the Monongahela to see the mines from which the fine coals we had seen burning were brought. These coals are taken out from the side of a steep hill, very near to the river, and brought from thence and laid down in any part of the town for 7 cents the bushel, weighing, perhaps, 80 lbs. Better coals I never saw. A bridge is now building over the river, by which they will most probably be brought still cheaper.

475. This place surpasses even my expectations,

both in natural resources and in extent of manufactures. Here are the materials for every species of manufacture, nearly, and of excellent quality and in profusion; and these means have been taken advantage of by skilful and industrious artizans and mechanics from all parts of the world. There is scarcely a denomination of manufacture or manual profession that is not carried on to a great extent, and, as far as I have been able to examine, in the best manner. The manufacture of iron in all the different branches, and the mills of all sorts, which I examined with the most attention, are admirable.

476. Price of flour, from 4 to 5 dollars a barrel; butter 14 cents per lb.; other provisions in proportion and mechanic's and good labourer's wages I dollar, and

ship-builder's I dollar and a half, a day.

477. June 6th.—Leave Pittsburgh, and set out in a thing called an ark, which we buy for the purpose, down the Ohio. We have, besides, a small skiff, to tow the ark and go ashore occasionally. This ark, which would stow away eight persons, close packed, is a thing by no means pleasant to travel in, especially at night. It is strong at bottom, but may be compared to an orange-box, bowed over at top, and so badly made as to admit a boy's hand to steal the oranges: it is proof

against the river, but not against the rain.

478. Just on going to push off the wharf, an English officer stepped on board of us, with all the curiosity imaginable. I at once took him for a spy hired to way-lay travellers. He began a talk about the Western Countries, anxiously assuring us that we need not hope to meet with such a thing as a respectable person, travel where we would. I told him I hoped in God I should see no spy or informer, whether in plain clothes or regimentals, and that of one thing I was certain, at any rate: that I should find no Sinecure placeman or pensioner in the Western country.

479. The Ohio, at its commencement, is about 600 yards broad, and continues running with nearly parallel sides, taking two or three different directions in its course, for about 200 miles. There is a curious contrast between the waters which form this river: that of the Allegany is clear and transparent, that of the Monongahela thick and muddy, and it is not for a considerable distance that they entirely mingle. The sides of the river are beautiful; there are always rich bottom lands upon the banks, which are steep and pretty high, varying in width from a few yards to a mile, and skirted with steep hills varying also in height, overhanging with fine timber.

480. June 7th.—Floating down the Ohio, at the rate of four miles an hour. Lightning, thunder, rain and hail pelting in upon us. The hail-stones as large as English hazel-nuts. Stop at Steubenville all night. A nice place; has more stores than taverns, which is a

good sign.

481. June 8th.—Came to Wheeling at about 122 o'clock. It is a handsome place, and of considerable note. Stopped about an hour. Found flour to be about 4 to 5 dollars a barrel; fresh beef 4 to 6 cents per lb., and other things (the produce of the country) about the same proportion. Labourers' wages, 1 dollar a day.

Fine coals here, and at Steubenville.

482. June 9th.—Two fine young men join us, one a carpenter and the other a saddler, from Washington, in a skiff that they have bought at Pittsburgh, and in which they are taking a journey of about 700 miles down the river. We allow them to tie their skiff to our ark, for which they very cheerfully assist us. Much diverted to see the nimbleness with which they go on shore sometimes with their rifles to shoot pigeons and squirrels. The whole expenses of these two young men in floating the 700 miles, will be but 7 dollars each, including skiff and every thing else.

483. This day pass Marietta, a good looking town at the mouth of the Muskingham River. It is, however, like many other towns on the Ohio, built on too low ground, and is subject to inundations. Here I observe a contrivance of great ingenuity. There is a strong rope put across the mouth of the river, opposite the town, fastened to trees or large posts on each side; upon this rope runs a pulley or block, to which is attached a rope, and to the rope a ferry-boat, which, by moving the helm first one way and then the other, is propelled by the force of the water across the river backwards or forwards.

484. June 10th. - Pass several fine coal mines, which, like those at Pittsburgh, Steubenville, Wheeling and other places, are not above 50 yards from the river and are upwards of 10 yards above high water. The river now becomes more winding than we have hitherto found it. It is sometimes so serpentine that it appears before and behind like a continuation of lakes, and the hills on its banks seem to be the separations. Altogether, nothing can be more beautiful.

485. June 11th.—A very hot day, but I could not discover the degree of heat. On going along we bought two Perch, weighing about 8 lbs. each, for 25 cents, of a boy who was fishing. Fish of this sort will sometimes

weigh 30 lbs. each.

486. June 12th.—Pass Portsmouth, at the mouth of the Scioto River. A sort of village, containing a hundred or two of houses. Not worthy of any particular remark.

487. June 13th .- Arrived at Cincinnati about midnight. Tied our ark to a large log at the side of the river, and went to sleep. Before morning, however, the fastening broke, and, if it had not been for a watchful back-woodsman whom we had taken on board some distance up the river, we might have floated ten or fifteen miles without knowing it. This back-woodsman, besides being of much service to us, has been a very entertaining companion. He says he has been in this country forty years, but that he is an Englishman, and was bred in Sherwood Forest (he could not have come from a better nursery). All his adventures he detailed to us very minutely, but dwelt with particular warmth upon one he had had with a priest, lately, who, to spite him for preaching, brought an action against him, but was cast and had to pay costs.

488. June 14th and 15th.—Called upon Doctor Drake and upon a Mr. Bosson, to whom we had letters. These gentlemen shewed us the greatest civility, and treated us with a sort of kindness which must have changed the opinion even of the English officer whom we saw at Pittsburgh, had he been with us. I could tell that dirty hireling scout, that even in this short space of time, I have had the pleasure to meet many gentlemen, very well informed, and possessing great knowledge as to their own country, evincing public spirit in all their actions, and hospitality and kindness in all their demeanour; but, if they be pensioners, male or female, or sinecure place lords or ladies, I have yet come across,

thank God, no respectable people.

489. Cincinnati is a very fine town, and elegantly (not only in the American acceptation of the word) situated on the banks of the river, nearly opposite to Licking Creek, which runs out of Kentucky, and is a stream of considerable importance. The country round the town is beautiful, and the soil rich; the fields in its immediate vicinity bear principally grass, and clover of different sorts, the fragrant smell of which perfumes the air. The town itself ranks next to Pittsburgh, of the

towns on the Ohio, in point of manufactures.

490. We sold our ark, and its produce formed a deduction from our expenses, which, with that deduction, amounted to 14 dollars each, including every thing, for the journey from Pittsburgh to this place, which is upwards of 500 miles. I could not but remark the price of fuel here; 2 dollars a cord for Hickory; a cord is 8 feet by 4, and 4 deep, and the wood, the best in the world; it burns much like green Ash, but gives more heat. This, which is of course the highest price for fuel in this part of the country, is only about a fifth of what it is at Philadelphia.

491. June 16th.—Left Cincinnati for Louisville with seven other persons, in a skiff about 20 feet long and

5 feet wide.

492. June 17th.—Stopped at Vevay, a very near and beautiful place, about 70 miles above the falls of the Ohio. Our visit here was principally to see the mode used, as well as what progress was made, in the cultivation of the vine, and I had a double curiosity, never having as yet seen a vineyard. These vineyards are cultivated entirely by a small settlement of Swiss, of about a dozen families, who have been here about ten years. They first settled on the Kentucky river, but did not succeed there. They plant the vines in rows, attached to stakes like espaliers, and they plough beween with a one-horse plough. The grapes, which are

of the sorts of claret and madeira, look very fine and luxuriant, and will be ripe in about the middle of September. The soil and climate both appear to be quite congenial to the growth of the vine: the former rich and the latter warm. The north west wind, when it blows, is very cold, but the south, south east and south west winds, which are always warm, are prevalent. The heat, in the middle of the summer, I understand, is very great, being generally above 85 degrees, and sometimes above 100 degrees. Each of these families has a farm as well as a vineyard, so that they supply themselves with almost every necessary and have their wine all clear profit. Their produce will this year be probably not less than 5000 gallons; we bought 2 gallons of it at a dollar each, as good as I would wish to drink. Thus it is that the tyrants of Europe create vineyards in this new country!

The town is situated at the commencement of the falls, or rapids of the Ohio. The river, at this place, is little less than a mile wide, and the falls continue from a ledge of rocks which runs across the river in a sloping direction at this part, to Shippingport, about 2 miles lower down. Perceiving stagnant waters about the town, and an appearance of the house that we stopped at being infested with bugs, we resolved not to make any stay at Louisville, but got into our skiff and floated down the falls to Shippingport. We found it very rough floating, not to say dangerous. The river of very unequal widths and full of islands and rocks along this short distance, and the current very rapid, though the descent is not more than 22 feet. At certain times of the year

the water rises so that there is no fall; large boats can then pass.

494. At Shippingport, stopped at the house of Mr. Berthoud, a very respectable French gentleman, from whom we received the greatest civility during our stay,

which was two nights and the day intervening.

495. Shippingport is situated at a place of very great importance, being the upper extremity of that part of the river which is navigable for heavy steam-boats. All he goods coming from the country are re-shipped, and N 2

every thing going to it is un-shipped, here. Mr. Berthoud has the store in which the articles exporting or importing are lodged; and is, indeed, a great shipper,

though at a thousand miles from the sea.

496. June 20th.—Left the good and comfortable house of Mr. Berthoud, very much pleased with him and his amiable wife and family, though I differed with him a little in politics. Having been taught at church, when a boy, that the Pope was the whore of Babylon, that the Bourbons were tyrants, and that the Priests and privileged orders of France were impostors and petty tyrants under them, I could not agree with him in applauding the Boroughmongers of England for resubjugating the people of France, and restoring the Bourbons, the Pope, and the Inquisition.

497. Stop at New Albany, 2 miles below Shipping-port, till the evening. A Mr. Paxton, I am told, is the proprietor of a great part of the town, and has the grist and saw-mills, which are worked by steam, and the ferry across the river. Leave this place in company with a couple of young men from the western part of the state of New York, who are on their way to Tennessee in a small ferry-boat. Their whole journey will, pro-

bably, be about 1,500 miles.

498. June 21st .- Floating down the river, without

any thing in particular occurring.

499. June 22nd.—Sawa Mr. Johnstone and his wife reaping wheat on the side of the river. They told us they had come to this spot last year, direct from Manchester, Old England, and had bought their little farm of 55 acres of a back-woodsman who had cleared it, and was glad to move further westward, for 3 dollars an acre. They had a fine flock of little children, and pigs and poultry, and were cheerful and happy, being confident that their industry and economy would not be frustrated by visits for tithes or taxes.

500. June 23rd.—See great quantities of turkey-buzzards and thousands of pigeons. Came to Pigeon Creek, about 230 miles below the Falls, and stopped for the night at Evansville, a town of nine months old, near the mouth of it. We are now frequently met and passed by large, fine steam-boats, plying up and down

the river. One went by us as we arrived here which had left Shippingport only the evening before. They go down the river at the rate of 10 miles an hour, and charge passengers 6 cents a mile, boarding and lodging included. The price is great, but the time is short.

501. June 24th.—Left Evansville. This little place is rapidly increasing, and promises to be a town of considerable trade. It is situated at a spot which seems likely to become a port for shipping to Princeton and a pretty large district of Indiana. I find that the land speculators have made entry of the most eligible tracts of land, which will impede the partial, though not the final, progress of population and improvement in this part of the state.

502. On our way to Princeton, we see large flocks of fine wild turkeys, and whole herds of pigs, apparently very fat. The pigs are wild also, but have become so from neglect. Some of the inhabitants, who prefer sport to work, live by shooting these wild turkeys and pigs, and indeed, sometimes, I understand, they shoot and carry off those of their neighbours before

they are wild.

503. June 25th.—Arrived at Princeton, Indiana, about twenty miles from the river. I was sorry to see very little doing in this town. They cannot all keep stores and taverns! One of the storekeepers told me he does not sell more than ten thousand dollars value per annum: he ought, then, to manufacture something and not spend nine tenths of his time in lolling with a

segar in his mouth.

chase horses, as we had now gone far enough down the Ohio. While waiting in our tavern, two men called in armed with rifles, and made enquiries for some horses they suspected to be stolen. They told us they had been almost all the way from Albany, to Shawnee town after them, a distance of about 150 miles. I asked them how they would be able to secure the thieves, if they overtook them, in these wild woods; "O," said they, "shoot them off the horses." This is a summary mode of executing justice, thought I, though probably the most effectual, and, indeed, only

one in this state of society. A thief very rarely escapes here; not nearly so often as in more populous districts. The fact was, in this case, however, we discovered afterwards, that the horses had strayed away, and had returned home by this time. But, if they had been stolen, the stealers would not have escaped. When the loser is tired, another will take up the pursuit, and the whole country is up in arms till he is found.

505. June 27th.—Still at Princeton. At last we get suited with horses. Mine costs me only 135 dollars with the bridle and saddle, and that I am told is

18 dollars too much.

506. June 28th.—Left Princeton, and set out to see Mr. Birkbeck's settlement, in Illinois, about 35 miles from Princeton. Before we got to the Wabash we had to cross a swamp of half a mile wide; we were obliged to lead our horses, and walk up to the knees in mud and water. Before we got half across we began to think of going back; but, there is a sound bottom under it all, and we waded through it as well as we could. It is, in fact, nothing but a bed of very soft and rich land, and only wants draining to be made productive. We soon after came to the banks of the great Wabash, which is here about half a mile broad, and as the ferry-boat was crossing over with us I amused myself by washing my dirty boots. Before we mounted again we happened to meet with a neighbour of Mr. Birkbeck's, who was returning home; we accompanied him, and soon entered into the prairie lands, up to our horses' bellies in fine grass. These prairies, which are surrounded with lofty woods, put me in mind of immense noblemen's parks in England. Some of those we passed over are called wet prairies, but, they are dry at this time of the year; and, as they are none of them flat, they need but very simple draining to carry off the water all the year round. Our horses were very much tormented with flies, some as large as the English horse-fly and some as large as the wasp; these flies infest the prairies that are unimproved about three months in the year, but go away altogether as soon as cultivation begins.

507. Mr. Birkbeck's settlement is situated between

the two Wabashes, and is about ten miles from the nearest navigable water; we arrived there about sunset, and met with a welcome which amply repaid us for our day's toil. We found that gentleman with his two sons perfectly healthy and in high spirits: his daughters were at Henderson (a town in Kentucky, on the Ohio) on a visit. At present his habitation is a cabin, the building of which cost only 20 dollars; this little hutch is near the spot where he is about to build his house, which he intends to have in the most eligible situation in the prairie for convenience to fuel and for shelter in winter, as well as for breezes in summer, and will, when that is completed, make one of its appurtenances. I like this plan of keeping the old loghouse; it reminds the grand children and their chidren's children of what their ancestor has done for their

that is to say, settlers likely to become "society;" he has labourers enough near him, either in his own houses or on land of their own joining his estate. He was in daily expectation of his friends Mr. Flower's family, however, with a large party besides; they had just landed at Shawnee Town, about 20 miles distant. Mr. Birkbeck imforms me he has made entry of a large tract of land, lying, part of it, all the way from his residence to the great Wabash; this he will re-sell again in lots to any of his friends, they taking as much of it and wherever they choose (provided it be no more than they can cultivate), at an advance which I think very fair and liberal.

509. The whole of his operations had been directed hitherto (and wisely in my opinion) to building, fencing, and other important preparations. He had done nothing in the cultivating way but make a good garden, which supplies him with the only things that he cannot purchase, and, at present, perhaps, with more economy than he could grow them. He is within twenty miles of Harmony, in Indiana, where he gets his flour and all other necessaries (the produce of the country) and therefore employs himself much better in making barns and houses and mills for the reception and disposal of

his crops, and fences to preserve them while growing, before he grows them, than to get the crops first. I have heard it observed that any American settler, even without a dollar in his pocket, would have had something growing by this time. Very true! I do not question that at all; for, the very first care of a settler without a dollar in his pocket is to get something to eat, and, he would consequently set to work scratching up the earth, fully confident that after a long summering upon wild flesh (without salt, perhaps,) his own belly would stand him for barn, if his jaws would not for mill. But the case is very different with Mr. Birkbeck, and at present he has need for no other provision for winter but about a three hundredth part of his fine grass turned into hay, which will keep his necessary horses and cows: besides which he has nothing that eats but such pigs as live upon the waste, and a couple of fine young deer (which would weigh, they say, when full grown, 200 lbs. dead weight) that his youngest son is rearing up as pets.

510. I very much admire Mr. Birkbeck's mode of fencing. He makes a ditch 4 feet wide at top, sloping to 1 foot wide at bottom, and 4 feet deep. With the earth that comes out of the ditch he makes a bank on one side, which is turfed towards the ditch. Then a long pole is put up from the bottom of the ditch to 2 feet above the bank; this is crossed by a short pole from the other side, and then a rail is laid along between the forks. The banks were growing beautifully, and looked altogether very neat as well as formidable; though a live hedge (which he intends to have) instead of dead poles and rails, upon top, would make the fence far more effectual as well as handsomer. I am always surprised, until I reflect how universally and to what a degree, farming is neglected in this country, that this mode of fencing is not adopted in cultivated districts, especially where the land is wet, or lies low; for, there it answers a double purpose, being as effectual a drain as it is a fence.

511. I was rather disappointed, or sorry, at any rate, not to find near Mr. Birkbeck's any of the means for machinery or of the materials for manufactures,

such as the water-falls, and the minerals and mines, which are possessed in such abundance by the states of Ohio and Kentucky, and by some parts of Pennsylvania. Some of these, however, he may yet find. Good water he has, at any rate. He showed me a well 25 feet deep, bored partly through hard substances near the bottom, that was nearly overflowing with water of

with water of excellent quality.

512. July 1st .- Left Mr. Birkbeck's for Harmony, Indiana. The distance by the direct way is about 18 miles, but there is no road, as yet; indeed, it was often with much difficulty that we could discover the way at all. After we had crossed the Wabash, which we did at a place called Davis's Ferry, we hired a man to conduct us some part of the way through the woods. In about a mile he brought us to a track, which was marked out by slips of bark being stripped off the trees, once in about 40 yards; he then left us, and told us we could not mistake if we followed that track. We soon lost all appearance of the track, however, and of the "blazing" of the trees, as they call it; but, as it was useless to go back again for another guide, our only way was to keep straight on in the same direction, bring us where it would. Having no compass, this nearly cost us our sight, for it was just mid-day, and we had to gaze at the sun a long time before we discovered what was our course. After this we soon, to our great joy, found ourselves in a large corn field; rode round it, and came to Johnson's Ferry, a place where a Bayon (Boyau) of the Wabash is crossed. This Bayou is a run out of the main river, round a flat portion of land, which is sometimes overflowed: it is part of the same river, and the land encompassed by it, an island. Crossed this ferry in a canoe, and got a ferry-man to swim our horses after us. Mounted again and followed a track which brought us to Black River, which we forded without getting wet, by holding our feet up. After crossing the river we found a man who was kind enough to shew us about half a mile through the woods, by which our journey was shortened five or six miles. He put us into a direct track to Harmony, through lands as rich N5

as a dung-hill, and covered with immense timber; we thanked him, and pushed on our horses with eager curiosity to see this far-famed Harmonist Society.

513. On coming within the precincts of the Harmonites we found ourselves at the side of the Wabash again; the river on our right hand, and their lands on our left. Our road now lay across a field of Indian corn, of, at the very least, a mile in width, and bordering the town on the side we entered; I wanted nothing more than to behold this immense field of most beautiful corn to be at once convinced of all I had heard of the industry of this society of Germans, and I found, on proceeding a little farther, that the progress they

had made exceeded all my idea of it.

514. The town is methodically laid out in a situation well chosen in all respects; the houses are good and clean, and have, each one, a nice garden well stocked with all vegetables and tastily ornamented with flowers. I observe that these people are very fond of flowers, by the bye; the cultivation of them, and musick, are their chief amusements. I am sorry to see this, as it is to me a strong symptom of simplicity and ignorance, if not a badge of their German slavery. Perhaps the pains they take with them is the cause of their flowers being finer than any I have hitherto seen in America, but, most probably, the climate here is more favour-Having refreshed ourselves at the Tavern, where we found every thing we wanted for ourselves and our horses, and all very clean and nice, besides many good things we did not expect, such as beer, porter, and even wine, all made within the Society, and very good indeed, we then went out to see the people at their harvest, which was just begun. There were 150 men and women all reaping in the same field of wheat. A beautiful sight! The crop was very fine, and the field, extending to about two miles in length, and from half a mile to a mile in width, was all open to one view, the sun shining on it from the West, and the reapers advancing regularly over it.

515. At sun-set all the people came in, from the fields, work-shops, mills, manufactories, and from all their labours. This being their evening for prayer

during the week, the Church bell called them out again, in about 15 minutes, to attend a lecture from their High Priest and Law-giver, Mr. George Rapp. We went to hear the lecture, or, rather, to see the performance, for, it being all performed in German, we could understand not a word. The people were all collected in a twinkling, the men at one end of the Church and the women at the other; it looked something like a Quaker Meeting, except that there was not a single little child in the place. Here they were kept by their Pastor a couple of hours, after which they returned home to bed. This is the quantum of Church-service they perform during the week; but on Sundays they are in Church nearly the whole of the time from getting up to going to bed. When it happens that Mr. Rapp cannot attend, either by indisposition or other accident, the Society still meet as usual, and the elders (certain of the most trusty and discreet, whom the Pastor selects as a sort of assistants in his divine commission) converse on religious subjects.

516. Return to the Tavern to sleep; a good comfortable house, well kept by decent people, and the master himself, who is very intelligent and obliging, is one of the very few at Harmony who can speak English. Our beds were as good as those stretched upon by the most highly pensioned and placed Boroughmongers, and our sleep, I hope, much better than the tyrants ever get,

in spite of all their dungeons and gags.

at the manufacturing establishment, accompanied by our Tavern-keeper. I find great attention is paid to this branch of their affairs. Their principle is, not to be content with the profit upon the manual labour of raising the article, but also to have the benefit of the machine in preparing it for use. I agree with them perfectly, and only wish the subject was as well understood all over the United States as it is at Harmony. It is to their skill in this way that they owe their great prosperity; if they had been nothing but farmers, they would be now at Harmony in Pennsylvania, poor cultivators, getting a bare subsistence, instead of having doubled their property two or three times over, by

which they have been able to move here and select one

of the choicest spots in the country.

518. But in noting down the state of this Society, as it now is, its origin should not be forgotten; the curious history of it serves as an explanation to the jumble of sense and absurdity in the association. I will therefore trace the Harmonist Society from its outset in

Germany to this place.

519. The Sect had its origin at Wurtemberg in Germany, about 40 years ago, in the person of its present Pastor and Master, George Rapp, who, by his own account, "having long seen and felt the decline of the "Church, found himself impelled to bear testimony to "the fundamental principles of the Christian Reli-"gion; and, finding no toleration for his inspired doc-"trines, or for those who adopted them, he determined " with his followers to go to that part of the earth, where "they were free to worship God according to the dic-"tates of their conscience." In other words (I suppose), he had long beheld and experienced the slavery and misery of his country, and, feeling in his conscience that he was born more for a ruler than for a slave, found himself imperiously called upon to collect together a body of his poor countrymen and to lead them into a land of liberty and abundance. However, allowing him to have had no other than his professed views, he, after he had got a considerable number of proselytes, amounting to seven or eight hundred persons, among whom were a sufficiency of good labourers and artizans in all the essential branches of workmanship and trade, besides farmers, he embodied them into a Society, and then came himself to America (not trusting to Providence to lead the way) to seek out the land destined for these chosen children. Having done so, and laid the plan for his route to the land of peace and Christian love, with a foresight which shows him to have been by no means unmindful to the temporal prosperity of the Society, he then landed his followers in separate bodies, and prudently led them in that order to a resting place within Pennsylvania, choosing rather to retard their progress through the wilderness than to hazard the discontent that might arise from want and fatigue

in traversing it at once. When they were all arrived, Rapp constituted them into one body, having every thing in common, and called the settlement Harmony. This constitution he found authorised by the passage in Acts, iv. 32. " And the multitude of them that believed " were of one heart, and of one soul: neither said any " of them that aught of the things he possessed was his " own, but that they had all things common." Being thus associated, the Society went to work, early in 1805, building houses and clearing lands, according to the order and regulations of their leader; but the community of stock, or the regular discipline, or the restraints which he had reduced them to, and which were essential to his project, soon began to thin his followers, and principally, too, those of them who had brought most substance into the society; they demanded back their original portions and set out to seek the Lord by themselves. This falling off of the society, though it was but small, comparatively, in point of numbers, was a great reduction from their means; they had calculated what they should want to consume, and had laid the rest out in land; so that the remaining part were subjected to great hardships and difficulties for the first year or two of their settling, which was during the time of their greatest labours. However, it was not long before they began to reap the fruits of their toil, and in the space of six or seven years their settlement became a most flourishing colony. During that short space of time they brought iuto cultivation 3,000 acres of land (a third of their whole estate), reared a flock of nearly 2,000 sheep, and planted hop-gardens, orchards, and vineyards; built barns and stables to house their crops and their live stock, granaries to keep one year's produce of grain always in advance, houses to make their cyder, beer, and wine in, and good brick or stone warehouses for their several species of goods; constructed distilleries, mills for grinding, sawing, making oil, and, indeed, for every purpose, and machines for manufacturing their various materials for clothing and other uses; they had, besides, a store for retailing Philadelphia goods to the country, and nearly 100 good dwelling-houses of wood, a large stone-built tavern.

and, as a proof of superabundance, a dwelling-house and a meeting-house (alias the parsonage and church) which they had neatly built of brick. And, besides all these improvements within the society, they did a great deal of business, principally in the way of manufacturing, for the people of the country. worked for them with their mills and machines, some of which did nothing else, and their blacksmiths, tailors, shoe-makers, &c. when not employed by themselves, were constantly at work for their neighbours. Thus this everlastingly-at-work band of emigrants increased their stock before they quitted their first colony, to upwards of two hundred thousand dollars, from, probably not one fifth of that sum. What will not unceasing perseverance accomplish? But, with judgment and order to direct it, what in the world can stand against

520. In comparing the state of this society as it now is with what it was in Pennsylvania, it is just the same as to plan; the temporal and spiritual affairs are managed in the same way, and upon the same principles, only both are more flourishing. Rapp has here brought his disciples into richer land, and into a situation better in every respect, both for carrying on their trade, and for keeping to their faith; their vast extent of land is, they say, four feet deep of rich mould, nearly the whole of it, and it lies along the banks of a fine navigable river on one side, while the possibility of much interruption from other classes of Christians is effectually guarded against by an endless barricado of woods on the other side. Bringing the means and experience acquired at their first establishment, they have of course gone on improving and increasing (not in population) at a much greater rate. One of their greatest improvements, they tell me, is the working of their mills and manufacturing machines by steam; they feel the advantage of this more and more every year. They are now preparing to build a steam-boat; this is to be employed in their traffick with New Or-

^{*} A more detailed account of this society, up to the year 1811, will be found in Mr. Mellish's Travels, vol. 2.

leans, carrying their own surplus produce and returning with tea, coffee, and other commodities for their own consumption, and to retail to the people of the country. I believe they advance, too, in the way of ornaments and superfluities, for the dwelling-house they have now built their pastor, more resembles a Bishop's Palace than what I should figure to myself as the humble abode of a teacher of the "fundamental"

principles of the Christian Religion."

521. The government of this society is by bands, each consisting of a distinct trade or calling. They have a foreman to each band, who rules it under the general direction of the society, the law-giving power of which is in the High Priest. He cannot, however make laws without the consent of the parties. The manufacturing establishment, and the mercantile affairs and public accounts are all managed by one person; he, I believe, is one of the sons of Rapp. They have a bank, where a separate account is kept for each person; if any one puts in money, or has put in money, he may on certain conditions as to time, take it out again. They labour and possess in common; that is to say, except where it is not practicable or is immaterial, as with their houses, gardens, cows and poultry, which they have to themselves, each family. They also retain what property each may bring on joining the concern, and he may demand it in case of leaving the society, but without interest.

522. Here is certainly a wonderful example of the effects of skill, industry, and force combined. This congregation of far-seeing, ingenious, crafty, and bold, and of ignorant, simple, superstitious, and obedient, Germans, has shown what may be done. But, their example, I believe, will generally only tend to confirm this free people in their suspicion that labour is concomitant to slavery or ignorance. Instead of their improvements, and their success and prosperity altogether, producing admiration, if not envy, they have a social dicipline, the thought of which reduces these feelings to ridicule and contempt: that is to say, with regard to the mass; with respect to their leaders, one's feelings are apt to be stronger. A fundamental of

their religious creed (" restraining clause," a Chancery Lawyer would call it) requires restrictions on the propagation of the species; it orders such regulations as are necessary to prevent children coming but once in a certain number of years; and this matter is so arranged that, when they come, they come in little flocks, all within the same month, perhaps, like a farmer's lambs. The Law-giver here made a famously "restraining statute" upon the law of nature! This way of expounding law seems to be a main point of his policy; he by this means keeps his associates from increasing to an unruly number within, while more are sure not to come in from without; and, I really am afraid he will go a good way towards securing a monopoly of many great improvements in agriculture, both as to principle and method. People see the fine fields of the Harmonites, but, the prospect comes damped with the idea of bondage and celibacy. It is a curious society: was ever one heard of before that did not wish to increase! This smells strong of policy; some distinct view in the leaders, no doubt. Who would be surprised if we were to see a still more curious society by and bye ? A Society Sole! very far from improbable, if the sons of Rapp (for he has children, nevertheless, as well as Parson Malthus) and the Elders were to die, it not being likely that they will renounce or forfeit their right to the common stock. We should then have societies as well as corporations vested in one person! That would be quite a novel kind of benefice! but, not the less fat. I question whether the associated person of Mr. Rapp would not be in possession of as fine a domain and as many good things as the incorporated person of an Archbishop: nay, he would rival the Pope! But, to my journal.

523. Arrive at Princeton in the evening; a good part of our road lay over the fine lands of the Harmonites. I understand, by the bye, that the title deeds to these lands are taken in the name of Rapp and of his associates. Poor associates: if they do but rebel! Find the same store-keepers and tavern-keepers in the same attitudes that we left them in the other day. Their legs only a little higher than their heads, and

segars in their mouths; a fine position for business! It puts my friend in mind of the Roman posture in

dining.

524. July 3rd.—At Princeton all day. This is a pretty considerable place; very good as to buildings; but, is too much inland to be a town of any consequence until the inhabitants do that at home which they employ merchants and foreign manufacturers to do for them. Pay 1 dollar for a set of old shoes to my

horse, half the price of new ones.

525. July 4th .- Leave Princeton; in the evening, reach a place very appropriately called Mud-holes, after riding 46 miles over lands in general very good but very little cultivated, and that little very badly; the latter part of the journey in company with a Mr. Jones from Kentucky. Nature is the agriculturist here; speculation instead of cultivation, is the order of the day amongst men. We feel the ill effects of this in the difficulty of getting oats for our horses. However, the evil is unavoidable, if it really can be called an evil. As well might I grumble that farmers have not taken possession as complain that men of capital have. Labour is the thing wanted, but, to have that, money must come first. This Mud-holes was a sort of fort, not 4 years ago, for guarding against the Indians, who then committed great depredations, killing whole families often, men, women and children. How changeable are the affairs of this world! I have not met with a single Indian in the whole course of my route.

526. July 5th.—Come to Judge Chambers's, a good tavern; 35 miles. On our way, pass French Lick, a strong spring of water impregnated with salt and sulphur, and called Lick from its being resorted to by cattle for the salt; close by this spring is another still larger, of fine clear lime-stone water, running fast enough to turn a mill. Some of the trees near the Judge's exhibit a curious spectacle; a large piece of wood appears totally dead, all the leaves brown and the branches broken, from being roosted upon lately by an enormous multitude of pigeons. A novel sight for us, unaccustomed to the abundance of the back-

woods! No tavern but this, nor house of any descrip-

tion, within many miles.

amused by hearing a Quaker-lady preach to the natives. Her first words were "all the nations of the earth are of one blood." "So," said I to myself, "this question, "which has so long perplexed philosophers, divines "and physicians, is now set at rest!" She proceeded to vent her rage with great vehemence against hireling priests and the trade of preaching in general, and closed with dealing out large portions of brimstone to the drunkard and still larger and hotter to those who give the bottle to drink. This part of her discourse pleased me very much, and may be a saving to me into the bargain; for, the dread of everlasting roasting added to my love of economy will (I think) prevent me making my friends tipsy. A very efficacious sermon!

529. July 8th.—Jenkins's is a good tavern, but it entertains at a high price. Our bill was 6 dollars each for a day and two nights; a shameful charge. Leave New Albany, cross the Ohio, and pass through Louisville in Kentucky again, on our way to Lexington, the capital. Stop for the night at Mr. Netherton's, a good tavern. The land hitherto is good, and the country altogether healthy, if I may judge from the people who appear more cheerful and happy than in Indiana, always excepting Harmony. Our landlord is the picture of health and strength: 6 feet 4 inches high, weighs

300 lbs. and not fat.

530. July 9th.—Dine at Mr. Overton's tavern, on our way to Frankfort; pay half a dollar each for an excellent dinner, with as much brandy and butter-milk

as we chose to drink, and good feed for our horses. In the afternoon we have the pleasure to be overtaken by two ladies on horseback, and have their agreeable company for a mile or two. On their turning off from our road we were very reluctantly obliged to refuse an obliging invitation to drink tea at their house, and myself the more so, as one of the ladies informed me she had married a Mr. Constantine, a gentleman from my own native town of Bolton, in Lancashire. But, we had yet so far to go, and it was getting dark. This most healthful mode of travelling is universal in the Western States, and it gives me great pleasure to see it; though, perhaps, I have to thank the badness of the roads as the cause. Arrive at Frankfort, apparently a thriving town, on the side of the rough Kentucky river. The houses are built chiefly of brick, and the streets, I understand, paved with limestone. Limestone abounds in this state, and yet the roads are not good, though better than in Indiana and Ohio, for, there there are none. I wonder the government of these states do not set about making good roads and bridges, and even canals. I pledge myself to be able to shew them how the money might be raised, and, moreover, to prove that the expense would be paid over and over again in almost no time. Such improvements would be income to the governments instead of expense, besides being such an incalculable benefit to the states. But, at any rate, why not roads, and in this state, too, which is so remarkable for its quality of having good road materials and rich land together, generally all over it?

a district of fine land, very well watered, to Lexington; stop at Mr. Keen's tavern. Had the good fortune to meet Mr. Clay, who carried us to his house, about a mile in the country. It is a beautiful residence, situated near the centre of a very fine farm, which is just cleared and is coming into excellent cultivation. I approve of Mr. Clay's method very much, especially in laying down pasture. He clears away all the brush or underwood, leaving timber enough to afford a sufficiency of shade to the grass, which does not thrive here exposed to the sun as in England and other such climates. By

this means he has as fine grass and clover as can possibly grow. I could not but admire to see this gentleman, possessing so much knowledge and of so much weight in his country's affairs, so attentively promoting her not less important though more silent interests by improving her agriculture. What pleased me still more, however, because I less expected it, was, to hear Mrs. Clay, in priding herself on the state of society, and the rising prosperity of the country, citing as a proof the decency and affluence of the trades-people and mechanics at Lexington, many of whom ride about in their own carriages. What a contrast, both in sense and in sentiment, between this lady and the wives of Legislators (as they are called), in the land of the Boroughmongers! God grant that no privileged batch ever rise up in America, for then down come the mechanics, are harnessed themselves, and half ridden to death.

532. July 11th.—This is the hottest day we have had yet. Thermometer at 90 degrees, in shade. Met a Mr. Whittemore, from Boston, loud in the praise of this climate. He informed me he had lately lost his wife and five children near Boston, and that he should have lost his only remaining child, too, a son now stout and healthy, had he not resolved instantly to try the air of the west. He is confident that if he had taken this step in time he might have saved the lives of all his family. This might be, however, and yet this climate not better than that of Boston. Spent the evening with Colonel Morrison, one of the first settlers in this state; a fine looking old gentleman, with colour in his face equal to a London Alderman. The people here are pretty generally like that portion of the people of England who get porridge enough to eat; stout, fat, and ruddy.

533. July 12th.—Hotter than yesterday; thermo-

meter at 91 degrees.

534. July 13th.—Leave Lexington; stop at Paris, 22 miles. A fine country all the way; good soil, plenty of limestone and no musquitoes. Paris is a healthy town, with a good deal of stir; woollen and cotton manufactures are carried on here, but upon a small scale,

They are not near enough to good coal mines to do much in that way. What they do, however, is well paid for. A spinner told me he gets 83 cents per lb. for his twist, which is 33 cents more than it would fetch at New York. Stop at Mr. Timberlake's, a good house. The bar-keeper, who comes from England, tells me that he sailed to Canada, but he is glad he had the means to leave Canada and come to Kentucky; he has 300 dollars a year, and board and lodging. Made enquiry after young Watson, but find he has left this place and is gone to Lexington.

535. The following is a list of the wages and prices of the most essential branches of workmanship and articles of consumption, as they are here at present.

Journeymen saddlers' price for	Dls. Cts.	Dis. Cts:
drawing on men's saddles	*1 25	to 2 50
Journeymen blacksmiths, per day	1	- 1 25
—Per month	25	- 30
Journeymen hatters (casters)	1 25	Was der trest
Ditto, rorum	1	- Against
Ditto for finishing, per month.	171-194F	14 M 10 CO
and found	30	Manual Visited Street
Journeymen shoe-makers (coarse)	75	何 <u>多。</u> 生今年,各位的
Ditto, fine	1 25	A CHARLES
Ditto, for boots	3 25	NATURE OF
Journeymen tailors, by the coat	5	Last emi
Stone-masons or bricklayers, per		四株学 ,例由他
day	1	- 1 50
Carpenters, per day, and found	1	(2000年)
Salary for a clerk, per annum	200	-500
Beef, per 100 lbs	6	Hill briking
Flour, per barrel	6	n in Jacque

536. July 14th.—Hot again; 90 degrees. Arrive at Blue Licks, close by the fine Licking Creek, 22 miles from Paris. Here is a sulphur and salt spring like that at French Lick in Indiana, which makes this a place of great resort in summer for the fashionable

^{*} Or 5s. $7\frac{1}{2}d$. to 11s. 3d. sterling. At the present rate of exchange, a dollar is equivalent to 4s. 6d. sterling, and a cent is the hundredth part of a dollar.

swallowers of mineral waters; the three or four taverns are at this time completely crowded. Salt was made till latterly at this spring, by an old Scotsman; he now attends the ferry across the Creek. Not much to be said for the country round here; it is stony and barren, what

I have not seen before in Kentucky.

537. July 15th.—To Maysville, or Lime-stone, 24 miles. This is a place on the banks of the Ohio, and is a sort of port for shipping down the river to a great part of that district of the state for which Louisville is the shipping port to and from New Orleans. Still hot; 90 degrees again. This is the fifth day; rather unusual, this continuance of heat. The hot spells as well as the cold spells, seldom last more than three days, pretty generally in America.

538. July 16th.—Hot still, but a fine breeze blowing up the river. Not a bit too hot for me, but the natives say it is the hottest weather they recollect in this country; a proof to me that this is a mild climate, as to heat, at any rate. Saw a cat-fish in the market, just caught out of the river by a hook and line, 4 feet long and eighty pounds weight, offered for 2 dollars. Price of flour, 6 dollars a barrel; fresh beef, 63 cents, and

butter 20 cents per lb.

539. July 17th.—Set out again, crossing the Ohio into the state of that name, and take the road to Chillicothe, 74 miles from Maysville. Stop about mid-way for the night, travelling over a country generally hilly, and not of good soil, and passing through West Union, a place situated as a town ought to be, upon high and unlevel lands; the inhabitants have fine air to breathe. and plenty of food to eat and drink, and, if they keep their houses and streets and themselves clean, I will ensure them long lives. Some pretty good farms in view of the road, but many abandoned for the richer lands of Indiana and Illinois. Travelling expenses much less, hitherto, than in Indiana and some parts of Kentucky; we had plenty of good buttermilk at the farm-houses all along the road, free of expense, and the tavern-keepers do not set before us bread made of Indian corn, which we have not yet learned to like very cordially.

540. July 18th.—Come to Chillicothe, the country improving and more even as we proceed. See some very rich lands on passing Paint Creek, and on approaching the Scioto river; these, like all the bottom lands, having a coat of sediment from their river in addition to the original soil, are by far the richest. Chillicothe is a handsome town, regularly laid out, but stands upon a flat. I hate the very sight of a level street, unless there be every thing necessary to carry off all filth and water. The air is very fine, so far as it is not contaminated by the pools of water which stand about the town as green as grass. Main sewers, like those at Philadelphia, are much wanted.

541. July 19th.—Called upon Mr. Bond, being introduced by letter, and spent a very pleasant evening with him and a large party of his agreeable friends.

Left them, much pleased with the society of Chillians.

Left them, much pleased with the society of Chillicothe. 542. July 20th.-We were introduced to Governor Worthington, who lives about 2 miles from the town. He took us to his house, and showed us part of his fine estate, which is 800 acres in extent, and all of it elevated table land, commanding an immense view over the flat country in the direction of Lake Erie. The soil is very rich indeed; so rich, that the Governor pointed out a dung heap which was bigger than the barn it surrounded and had grown out of, as a nuisance. The labour of dragging the dung out of the way, would be more than the cost of removing the barn, so that he is actually going to pull the barn down, and build it up again in another place. This is not a peculiarity of this particular spot of land, for manure has no value here at all. All the stable-dung made at Chillicothe is flung into the river. I dare say, that the Inn we put up at does not tumble into the water less than 300 good loads of horse-dung every year.

543. I had some conversation with Governor Worthington on the subject of domestic manufactures, and was glad to find he is well convinced of the necessity of, or at least of the great benefit that would result from, the general establishment of them in the United States. He has frequently recommended it in his public capacity, he informed me, and I hope he will

advocate it with effect. He is a true lover of his country, and no man that I have met with has a more thorough knowledge of the detestable villany of the odious Boroughmongering government of England,

and, of course, it has his full share of hatred.

544. July 21st.—Leave Chillicothe. A fine, healthy country and very rich land all the way to New Lancaster, 34 miles from Chillicothe, and 38 from Zanesville. Stop at the house of a German, where we slept, but not in bed, preferring a soft board and something clean for a pillow to a bed of down accompanied with

bugs.

545. Nothing remarkable, that I can see, as to the locality of this town of New Lancaster; but, the name, alas! it brought to my recollection the horrid deeds done at Old Lancaster, the county town of my native country! I thought of Colonel F-r, and his conduct towards my poor, unfortunate townsman, Gallant! I thought of the poor, miserable creatures, men, women, and children, who, in the bloody year of 1812, were first instigated by spies to commit arson, and then pursued into death by the dealers in human blood. Amongst the sufferers, upon this particular occasion, there was a boy, who was silly, and who would, at any time, have jumped into a pit for a halfpenny: he was not fourteen years old; and when he was about to be hanged, actually called out for his "mammy" to come and save him! Who, that has a heart in his bosom, can help feeling indignation against the cruel monsters! Who can help feeling a desire to see their dreadful power destroyed! The day must come, when the whole of the bloody tragedies of Lancashire will be exposed. In the mean while, here I am in safety from the fangs of the monsters, who oppress and grind my countrymen. The thought of these oppressions, however, I carry about with me; and I cannot help its sometimes bursting forth into words.

546. July 22nd.—Arrive at Zanesville,* a place

^{*} For a more particular account of this place, as well, indeed, as of most of the other towns I have visited, see Mr. Mellish's Travels, vol. ii.

finely situated for manufactures, in a nook of the Muskingham, just opposite to the mouth of Licking Creek. It has almost every advantage for manufacturing of all sorts, both as to local situation and as to materials; it excels Wheeling and Steubenville, in many respects, and, in some, even Pittsburgh. The river gives very fine falls near the town, one of them of 12 feet, where it is 600 feet wide; the creek, too, falls in by a fine cascade. What a power for machinery! I should think that as much effect might be produced by the power here afforded as by the united manual labour of all the inhabitants of the state. The navigation is very good all the way up to the town, and is now continued round the falls by a canal with locks, so that boats can go nearly close up to Lake Erie. The bowels of the earth afford coal, iron ore, stone, free stone, lime-stone, and clays: all of the best, I believe, and the last, the very best yet discovered in this country, and, perhaps, as good as is to be found in any country. All these materials are found in inexhaustible quantities in the hills and little ridges on the sides of the river and creek, arranged as if placed by the hand of man for his own use. In short, this place has the four elements in the greatest perfection that I have any where yet seen in America. As to manufactures, it is, like Wheeling and Steubenville, nothing in comparison to Pittsburg.

547. Nature has done her part; nothing is left wanting but machines to enable the people of Ohio to keep their flour at home, instead of exporting it, at their own expense, to support those abroad who are industrious enough to send them back coats, knives, and

cups and saucers.

548. July 23rd.—All day at Zanesville. Spent part of it very agreeably with Mr. Adams the post-master, and old Mr. Dillon who has a large iron foundery near this.

549. July 24th.—Go with Mr. Dillon about 3 miles up the Creek, to see his mills and iron-factory establishment. He has here a very fine water-fall, of 18 feet, giving immense power, by which he works a

WOA					4 100
large iron-forge and foundery, and	l m	ills	for	saw	ing,
grinding, and other purposes.					
550. I will here subjoin a lis	st o	f th	e p	rices	sat
Zanesville, of provisions, stock,	sto	res,	lab	our,	xc.
just as I have it from a residen	t, w	hom	11	can	rely
upon.					
Flour (superfine) per barrel of	Dls	. Cts.		Dls.	Cts.
196 lbs. from	5	0	to	5	75
Beef, per 100 lbs		0		4	
Pork (prime), per 100 lbs		200	-	5	0
Salt, per bushel of 50 lbs		25		7300	03/8
Potatoes, per bushel			-	0	315
Turnips, ditto		20			
Wheat, ditto of 60 lbs. to 66 lbs.		75			-
Indian Corn, ditto, shelled		-	-	0	50
Oats, ditto		25	-	0	33
Rye, ditto		50			
Barley, ditto	U	75			
Turkeys, of from 12 lbs. to 20 lbs.	0	971		0	50
each	0	101	10.0	0	183
Fowls 100 lbs live	U	142	-	U	104
Live Hogs, per 100 lbs. live weight	2	0	101	5	0
Cows, (the best)				25	1000
Yoke of Oxen, ditto	50		No way		0
Sheep		50		05049	B
Hay, per ton, delivered			al NO	10	0
Straw, fetch it and have it.	BUS				
Manure, ditto, ditto.			30,8		
Coals, per bushel, delivered	0	8			
Butter, per lb. avoirdupois	0	12	-	. 0	18
Cheese, ditto, ditto	0	12	1 -	. 0	25
Loaf Sugar	0	50	N. D.		
Raw ditto	0	31	F		
Domestic Raw ditto	0	18	3		
Merino Wool, per lb. avoirdupois,			110161		
washed	. 100	0		3000	2000
Three-quarter Merino ditto	-	75			
Common Wool	100	50	Pier.	-	
Bricks, per 1000, delivered		10	- marine	. 7	0
Lime, per bushel, ditto	U	18			1

	-	` .	
Part III.j	Journal.		291
Sand, in abunda	nce on the banks	Dls. Cts	Dis. Cts.
of the river.	All tall to the		dance charge
Glass is sold in b	ooxes, containing		
100 square fe	et; of the com-		
mon size there	are 180 panes	e charles	
The price of	en the price is	14 0	
The price rises i	in proportion to	N. A.	
the size of the	panes		A SHARLING THE SAME
Oak planks, 1	men thick, per		
Poplar, the same	t, at the saw-mill	1 50	
White Lead, pe	e. 100 lbs de		
livered pe	100 los. de-	18 0	
Red ditto	************	17 0	The state of the s
Litharge		17 0 15 0	
Pig Lead	de viducionus con	9 50	Esta Balling A
Swedish Iron (th	e best, in bars)	14 0	TOWN TOWNS
Juniatta, ditto, d	litto	14 0	
Mr. Dillon's ditto	, ditto	12 50	
Castings at Mr. Di	llon's Founderv.	21.30 014	
per ton		120 0	
Ditto, for machine	ry, ditto, per lb.	0 8	
Potash, per ton		180 0	and the second
Pearl Ashes, ditto		200 0	hal didn.
Stone masons ar	nd bricklayers,		
per day, and box	ard and lodging	1 50	
Plasterers, by the	e square yard,		· A CHESTA
they finding then	nselves in board		
and lodging and		Dill Bu	
laths and every	thing they use.	$0.18\frac{3}{4}$	The Particular of the Particul
Carpenters, by	the day, who		
find themselves	and bring their	1 0-	
tools	ho mouth and	1 25	
Blacksmiths, by t			
found in board		60 0	4. 40 0
tools	day finding	30 0	to 40 0
themselves	day, initing	7 50	200
Tailors, per week,	finding them.	1 50	- 2 0
selves and work	king 14 or 15		
hours a day		7 0	_ 9 0
Shoemakers, the	same.	o and a	3 0
, ,,,	02		

Glazier's charge for putting in each pane of glass 8 in. by 10 in. with their own putty and laying on the first coat of	Dls.	Cts.	D	ls. Cts,
	0	4	to	0 5
Labourers, per annum, and found	EN SE	1	-12	
The charge of carriage for 100		Posi	D. Alabara	
lbs. weight from Baltimore to				
Zanesville	10	0		
Ditto for ditto by steam-boat from				
New Orleans to Shippingport,				
and thence, by boats, to Zanes-	990			and trees
ville, about	6	50		ar this co
Peaches, as fine as can grow, per				
bushel	0	121	-	0 25
Apples and Pears proportionably	che	aper	; som	etimes
given away, in the country.	fi od	h ab	Sold H	anonsa.

551. Prices are much about the same at Steubenville; if any difference, rather lower. If bought in a quantity, some of the articles enumerated might be had a good deal lower. Labour, no doubt, if a job of some length were offered, might be got somewhat cheaper, here.

552. July 25th.—Leave Zanesville for Pittsburg, keeping to the United States road; stop at Cambridge, 25 miles. During the first eight miles we met 10

wagons, loaded with emigrants.

553. July 26th.—Stop at Mr. Broadshaw's, a very good house on the road, 25 miles from Cambridge. This general government road is by no means well laid out; it goes straight over the tops of the numerous little hills, up and down, up and down. It would have been a great deal nearer in point of time, if not in distance (though I think it would that, too), if a view had been had to the labour of travelling over these everlasting unevennesses.

554. July 27th.—To Wheeling in Virginia, 31 miles. They have had tremendous rains in these parts, we hear as we pass along, lately; one of the creeks we came over has overflown so as to carry down a man's house with himself and his whole family. A dreadful catastrophe, but, certainly, one not out of the man's

power to have foreseen and prevented; it surprises me that the people will stick up their houses so near the water's edge. Cross Wheeling Creek several times to-day; it is a rapid stream, and I hope it will not be long before it turns many water-wheels. See much

good land, and some pretty good farming.

555. July 28th.-Went with a Mr. Graham, a Quaker of this place, who treated us in the most friendly and hospitable manner, to see the new national road from Washington city to this town. It is covered with a very thick layer of nicely broken stones, or stone, rather, laid on with great exactness both as to depth and width, and then rolled down with an iron roller, which reduces all to one solid mass. This is a road made for ever; not like the flint roads in England, rough, nor soft or dirty, like the gravel roads; but, smooth and hard. When a road is made in America it is well made. An American always plots against labour, and, in this instance, he takes the most effectual course to circumvent it. Mr. Graham took us likewise to see the fine coal mines near this place and the beds of limestone and freestone, none of which I had time to examine as we passed Wheeling in our ark. All these treasures lie very convenient to the river. The coals are principally in one long ridge, about ten feet wide; much the same as they are at Pittsburgh, in point of quality and situation. They cost 3 cents per bushel to be got out from the mine. This price, as nearly as I can calculate, enables the American collier to earn, upon an average, double the number of cents for the same labour that the collier in England can earn; so that, as the American collier can, upon an average, buy his flour for one third of the price that the English collier pays for his flour, he receives six times the quantity of flour for the same labour. Here is a country for the ingenious paupers of England to come to! They find food and materials, and nothing wanting but their mouths and hands to consume and work them. I should like to see the old toast of the Boroughmongers brought out again; when they were in the height of their impudence their myrmidons used to din in our ears, "Old England for

"ever, and those that do not like her let them leave her." Let them renew this swaggering toast, and I would very willingly for my part, give another to the same effect for the United States of America. But, no, no! they know better now. They know that they would be taken at their word; and, like the tyrants of Egypt, having got their slaves fast, will (if they can) keep them so. Let them beware, lest something worse than the Red Sea overwhelm them! Like Pharaoh and his Boroughmongers they will not yield to the voice of the people, and, surely, something like, or worse

than, their fate shall befall them!

556. They are building a steam-boat at Wheeling, which is to go, they say, 1800 miles up the Missouri river. The wheels are made to work in the stern of the boat, so as not to come in contact with the floating trees, snaggs, planters,* &c., obstructions most likely very numerous in that river. But, the placing the wheels behind only saves them; it is no protection against the boat's sinking in case of being pierced by a planter or sawyer. † Observing this, I will suggest a plan which has occurred to me, and which, I think, would provide against sinking, effectually; but, at any rate, it is one which can be tried very easily and with very little expense.—I would make a partition of strong plank; put it in the broadest fore-part of the boat, right across, and put good iron bolts under the bottom of the boat, through these planks, and serew them on the top of the deck. Then put an upright post in the inside of the boat against the middle of the plank partition, and put a spur to the upright post. The partition should be water-tight. I would then load the forepart of the boat, thus partitioned off with lumber or such loading as is least liable to injury, and best calculated to stop the progress of a sawyer after it has gone through the boat.—By thus appropriating the fore-part of the boat to the reception of planters and sawyers, it appears to me that the other part would be secured against all intrusion.

^{*} Trees tumbled head-long and fixed in the river.

[†] The same as the planter, only waving up and down.

557. July 29th.—From Wheeling, through Charlston, changing sides of the river again to Steubenville. My eyes were delighted at Charlston to see the smoke of the coals ascending from the glass-works they have here. This smoke it is that must enrich America; she might save almost all her dollars if she would but bring her invaluable black diamonds into service. Talk of independence, indeed, without coats to wear or knives

or plates to eat with!

558. At Steubenville, became acquainted with Messrs. Wills, Ross, and company, who have an excellent and well-conducted woollen manufactory here. They make very good cloths, and at reasonable prices; I am sorry they do not retail them at Philadelphia; I, for one, should be customer to them for all that my family wanted in the woollen-way. Here are likewise a Cotton-mill, a Grist-mill, a Paper-mill, an Ironfoundery and Tan-yards and Breweries. Had the pleasure to see Mr. Wilson, the editor of the Steubenville Gazette, a very public-spirited man, and, I believe, very serviceable to this part of the country. If the policy he so powerfully advocates were adopted. the effects would be grand for America; it would save her dollars while it would help to draw the nails of the vile Boroughmongers. But, he has to labour against the inveterate effects of the thing the most difficult of all others to move—habit.

of the country, those who expect to find what is generally understood by society, pretty much the same that they have been accustomed to it on the Atlantic side, or in England, will not be totally disappointed. It is here upon the basis of the same manners and customs as in the oldest settled districts, and it there differs from what it is in England, and here from what it is there, only according to circumstances. Few of the social amusements that are practicable at present, are scarce; dancing the most rational for every reason, is the most common; and, in an assemblage for this purpose, composed of the farmers' daughters and sons from 20 miles round, an Englishman (particularly if a young one) might very well think his travels to be

all a dream, and that he was still in a Boroughmonger country. Almost always the same tunes and dances, same manners, same dress. Ah, it is that same dress which is the great evil! It may be a very pretty sight, but, to see the dollars thus danced out of the country into the hands of the Boroughmongers, to the tune of national airs, is a thing which, if it do not warrant ridicule, will, if America do not, by one unanimous voice, soon put a stop to it.

560. July 30th.—From Stubenville, crossing the Ohio for the last time, and travelling through a slip of Virginia and a handsome part of Pennsylvania, to

Pittsburgh.

561. August 1st.—Sold my horse for 75 dollars, 60 dollars less than I gave for him. A horse changes masters no where so often as in this Western country, and no where so often rises and falls in value. Met a Mr. Gibbs, a native of Scotland, and an old neighbour of mine, having superintended some oil of vitriol works near to my bleach-works on Great Lever, near Bolton, in Lancashire. He now makes oil of vitriol, aquafortis, salt, soap, &c. at this place, and is, I believe, getting rich. Spent a pleasant evening with him.

562. August 2nd.—Spent most part of the day with Mr. Gibbs, and dined with him; as the feast was his, I recommended him to observe the latter part of the good Quaker Lady's sermon which we heard at

New Albany.

563. August 3rd.—Leave Pittsburgh, not without some regret at bidding adieu to so much activity and smoke, for I expect not to see it elsewhere. I like to contemplate the operation by which the greatest effect is produced in a country. Take the same route and the same stage as on setting out from Philadelphia.

564. August 4th, 5th, and 6th.—These three days traversing the romantic Allegany Mountains; got overturned (a common accident here) only once, and then received very little damage: myself none, some of my fellow travellers a few scratches. We scrambled out, and, with the help of some wagoners, set the vehicle on its wheels again, adjusted our "plunder" (as some of the Western people call it), and drove on again

without being detained more than five minutes. The fourth night slept at Chambersburgh, the beginning of

a fine country.

565. August 7th.—Travelled over the fine lime-stone valley before mentioned, and through a very good country all the way, by Little York to Lancaster. Here I met with a person from Philadelphia, who told me a long story about a Mr. Hulme, an Englishman, who had brought a large family and considerable property to America. His property, he told me, the said Mr. Hulme had got from the English Government, for the invention of some machine, and that now, having got rich under their patronage, he was going about this country doing the said Government all the mischief he could, and endeavouring to promote the interest of this country. After letting him go on till I was quite satisfied that he depends mainly for his bread and butter upon the English Treasury, I said, "Well, do you "know this Mr. Hulme !" "No, he had only heard of "him." "Then I do, and I know that he never had "any patent, nor ever asked for one, from the En-"glish government; all he has got he has gained by " his own industry and economy, and, so far from re-" ceiving a fortune from that vile government, he had "nothing to do with it but to pay and obey, without "being allowed to give a vote for a Member of Par-" liament or for any Government officer. He is now, "thank God, in a country where he cannot be taxed "but by his own consent, and, if he should succeed " in contributing in any degree to the downfall of the " English Government, and to the improvement of "this country, he will only succeed in doing his duty." This man could be no other than a dependent of that boroughmongering system which has its feelers probing every quarter and corner of the earth.

566. August 8th.—Return to Philadelphia, after a journey of 72 days. My expenses for this journey, including every thing, not excepting the loss sustained by the purchase and sale of my horse, amount to 270

dollars and 70 cents.

567. As it is now about a twelvementh since I have

been settled in Philadelphia, or set foot in it, rather, with my family, I will take a look at my books, and add to this Journal what have been the expenses of my family for this one year, from the time of landing to this day, inclusive.

the returned on they state out or the	Dolls.	Cents.
House-rent	600	0
Fuel		0
Schooling (at day-schools) for my		
children viz.; for Thomas, 14 Dolls.		
years of age 40		
Peter and John, ages of 12 and 10 48		10-1111
Sarah, 6 years of age 18-	106	0
Boarding of all my family at Mrs. An-	-100	0
thony's Hotel for about a week, on our		
arrival	90	0
Expenses of house-keeping (my family	80	U
fourteen in number including two ser		
fourteen in number, including two ser-		
vants) with every other out-going not		
enumerated above, travelling inci-		mid 38
dents, two newspapers a day, &c. &c.	2076	66
Taxes, not a cent.	0	0
Priest, not a cent	0	0
what his this year, all a said short souther	1	-
Total :	2999	66

568. "What! nothing to the Parson!" some of my old neighbours will exclaim. No: not a single stiver. The Quakers manage their affairs without Parsons, and I believe they are as good and as happy a people as any religious denomination who are aided and assisted by a Priest. I do not suppose that the Quakers will admit me into their Society; but, in this free country I can form a new society, if I choose, and, if I do, it certainly shall be a Society having a Chairman in place of a Parson, and the assemblage shall discuss the subject of their meeting themselves. Why should there not be as much knowledge and wisdom and common sense, in the heads of a whole congregation, as in the head of a Parson? Ah, but then there are the profits arising from the trade! Some of this holy Order in England receive upwards of 40,000 dollars per

annum for preaching probably not more than five or six sermons during the whole year. Well may the Cossack Priests represent Old England as the bulwark of religion! This is the sort of religion they so much dreaded the loss of during the French Revolution, and this is the sort of religion they so zealously expected to establish in America, when they received the glad tidings of the restoration of the Bourbons and the Pope.

END OF THE JOURNAL.

TO

MORRIS BIRKBECK, Esq.

OF

ENGLISH PRAIRIE, ILLINOIS TERRITORY.

MY DEAR SIR,

North Hempstead, Long Island, 10 Dec. 1818.

569. I наче read your two little books, namely, the "Notes on a Journey in America," " and the Let"ters from the Illinois." I opened the books, and I proceeded in the perusal, with fear and trembling; not because I supposed it possible for you to put forth an intended imposition on the world; but, because I had a sincere respect for the character and talents of the writer; and because I knew how enchanting and delusive are the prospects of enthusiastic minds, when

bent on grand territorial acquisitions.

570. My apprehensions were, I am sorry to have it to say, but too well founded. Your books, written, I am sure, without any intention to deceive and decoy, and without any, even the smallest, tincture of base self-interest, are, in my opinion, calculated to produce great disappointment, not to say misery and ruin, amongst our own country people (for I will, in spite of your disavowal, still claim the honour of having you for a countryman), and great injury to America by sending back to Europe accounts of that disappointment, misery, and ruin.

571. It is very true, that you decline advising any one to go to the Illinois, and it is also true, that your description of the hardships you encountered is very candid; but still, there runs throughout the whole of your Notes such an account as to the prospect, that is to say, the ultimate effect, that the book is, without your either wishing or perceiving it, calculated to de-

ceive and decoy, You do indeed describe difficulties and hardships: but, then, you overcome them all with so much ease and gaiety, that you make them disregarded by your English readers, who, sitting by their fire-side, and feeling nothing but the gripe of the Boroughmongers and the tax-gatherer, merely cast a glance at your hardships and fully participate in all your enthusiasm. You do indeed fairly describe the rugged roads, the dirty hovels, the fire in the woods to sleep by, the pathless ways through the wildernesses, the dangerous crossings of the rivers; but, there are the beautiful meadows and rich lands at last; there is the fine freehold domain at the end! There are the giants and the enchanters to encounter; the slashings and the rib-roastings to undergo; but then, there is, at last, the lovely languishing damsel to repay the adventurer.

572. The whole of your writings relative to your undertaking, address themselves directly to English Farmers, who have property to the amount of two or three thousand pounds, or upwards. Persons of this description are, not by your express words, but by the natural tendency of your writings, invited, nay, strongly invited, to emigrate with their property to the Illinois Territory. Many have already acted upon the invitation. Many others are about to follow them. I am convinced, that their doing this is unwise, and greatly injurious, not only to them, but to the character of America as a country to emigrate to, and, as I have, in the first Part of this work, promised to give, as far as I am able, a true account of America, it is my duty to state the reasons on which this conviction is founded; and, I address the statement to you, in order, that, if you find it erroneous, you may, in the like public manner, show wherein I have committed error.

573. We are speaking, my dear Sir, of English Farmers possessing each two or three thousand pounds sterling. And, before we proceed to enquire, whether such persons ought to emigrate to the West or to the East, it may not be amiss to enquire a little, whether they ought to emigrate at all! Do not start, now! For, while I am very certain that the emigration of such

persons is not, in the end, calculated to produce benefit to America, as a nation, I greatly doubt of its being, generally speaking, of any benefit to the emigrants themselves, if we take into view the chances of their speedy relief at home.

574. Persons of advanced age, of settled habits, of deep rooted prejudices, of settled acquaintances, of contracted sphere of movement, do not, to use Mr. George FLOWER'S expression, "transplant well." Of all such persons, Farmers transplant worst; and, of all Farmers, English Farmers are the worst to transplant. Of some of the tears, shed in the ILLINOIS, an account reached me several months ago, through an eye-witness of perfect veracity, and a very sincere friend of freedom, and of you, and whose information was given me, unasked for, and in the presence of several Englishmen, every one of whom, as well as myself, most ardently wished your success.

575. It is nothing, my dear Sir, to say, as you do, in the Preface to the Letters from the Illinois, that, as " little would I encourage the emigration of the tribe of "grumblers, people who are petulant and discontented "under the every-day evils of life. Life has its petty " miseries in all situations and climates, to be miti-"gated or cured by the continual efforts of an elastic "spirit, or to be borne, if incurable, with cheerful pa-"tience. But the peevish emigrant is perpetually " comparing the comforts he has quitted, but never " could enjoy, with the privations of his new allotment. "He overlooks the present good, and broods over the " evil with habitual perverseness; whilst in the recol-" lection of the past, he dwells on the good only. Such " people are always bad associates, but they are an

" especial nuisance in an infant colony." 576. Give me leave to say, my dear Sir, that there is too much asperity in this language, considering who were the objects of the censure. Nor do you appear to me to afford, in this instance, a very happy illustration of the absence of that peevishness, which you perceive in others, and for the yielding to which you call them a nuisance; an appellation much too harsh for the object and for the occasion. If you, with all your

elasticity of spirit, all your ardour of pursuit, all your compensations of fortune in prospect, and all your gratifications of fame in possession, cannot with patience hear the wailings of some of your neighbours, into what source are they to dip for the waters of content

and good-humour?

577. It is no "every-day evil" that they have to bear. For an English Farmer, and, more especially, an English Farmer's wife, after crossing the sea and travelling to the Illinois, with the consciousness of having expended a third of their substance, to purchase, as yet, nothing but sufferings; for such persons to boil their pot in the gipsy-fashion, to have a mere board to eat on, to drink whisky or pure water, to sit and sleep under a shed far inferior to their English cow-pens, to have a mill at twenty miles' distance, an apothecary's shop at a hundred, and a doctor no where: these, my dear Sir, are not, to such people, " every-day evils "of life." You, though in your little "cabin," have your books, you have your name circulating in the world, you have it to be given, by and bye, to a city or a county; and, if you fail of brilliant success, you have still a sufficiency of fortune to secure you a safe retreat. Almost the whole of your neighbours must be destitute of all these sources of comfort, hope, and consolation. As they now are, their change is, and must be, for the worse; and, as to the future, besides the uncertainty attendant, every where, on that which is to come, they ought to be excused, if they, at their age, despair of seeing days as happy as those that they have seen.

578. It were much better for such people not to emigrate at all; for while they are sure to come into a state of some degree of suffering, they leave behind them the chance of happy days; and, in my opinion, a certainty of such days. I think it next to impossible for any man of tolerable information to believe, that the present tyranny of the seat-owners can last another two years. As to what change will take place, it would, perhaps, be hard to say; but, that some great change will come is certain; and, it is also certain, that the change must be for the better. Indeed, one of the motives for the emigration of many is said to be, that they

think a convulsion inevitable. Why should such persons as I am speaking of fear a convulsion? Why should they suppose, that they will suffer by a convulsion? What have they done to provoke the rage of the blanketteers? Do they think that their countrymen, all but themselves, will be transformed into prowling wolves? This is precisely what the Boroughmongers wish them to believe; and, believing it, they flee instead of remaining to assist to keep the people down, as the

Boroughmongers wish them to do.

579. Being here, however, they, as you say, think only of the good they have left behind them, and of the bad they find here. This is no fault of theirs: it is the natural course of the human mind; and this you ought to have known. You yourself acknowledge, that England " was never so dear to you as it is now " in recollection: being no longer under its base oli-" garchy, I can think of my native country and her " noble institutions, apart from her politics." I may ask you, by the way, what noble institutions she has, which are not of a political nature? Say the oppressions of her tyrants, say that you can think of her and love her renown and her famous political institutions, apart from those oppressions, and then I go with you with all my heart; but, so thinking, and so feeling, I cannot say with you in your Notes, that England is to me " matter of history," nor with you, in your Let-TERS FROM THE ILLINOIS, that "where liberty is, there " is my country."

English Farmers must emigrate, why should they encounter unnecessary difficulties? Coming from a country like a garden, why should they not stop in another somewhat resembling that which they have lived in before? Why should they, at an expense amounting to a large part of what they possess, prowl two thousand miles at the hazard of their limbs and lives, take women and children through scenes of hardship and distress not easily described, and that too, to live like gipsies at the end of their journey, for, at least, a year or two, and, as I think I shall show, without the smallest chance of their finally doing so well as they may do in these

Atlantic States? Why should an English Farmer and his family, who have always been jogging about a snug home-stead, eating regular meals, and sleeping in warm rooms, push back to the Illinois, and encounter those hardships, which require all the habitual disregard of comfort of an American back-woodsman to overcome? Why should they do this? The undertaking is hardly reconcileable to reason in an Atlantic American Farmer who has half a dozen sons, all brought up to use the axe, the saw, the chisel and the hammer from their infancy, and every one of whom is ploughman, carpenter, wheelwright and butcher, and can work from sun-rise to sun-set, and sleep, if need be, upon the bare boards. What, then, must it be in an English farmer and his family of helpless mortals? Helpless, I mean, in this scene of such novelty and such difficulty? And what is his wife to do; she who has been torn from all her relations and neighbours, and from every thing that she liked in the world, and who, perhaps, has never, in all her life before, been ten miles from the cradle in which she was nursed? An American farmer mends his plough, his wagon, his tackle of all sorts, his household goods, his shoes; and, if need be, he makes them all. Can our people do all this, or any part of it? Can they live without bread for months? Can they live without beer? Can they be otherwise than miserable, cut off, as they must be, from all intercourse with, and hope of hearing of, their relations and friends? The truth is, that this is not transplanting, it is tearing up and flinging away.

Tis true they have nobody to envy, for nobody can have any thing to enjoy. But there may be, and there must be, mutual complainings and upbraidings; and every unhappiness will be traced directly to him who has been, however unintentionally, the cause of the unhappy person's removal. The very foundation of your plan necessarily contained the seeds of discontent and ill-will. A colony all from the same country was the very worst project that could have been fallen upon. You took upon yourself the charge of Moses without being invested with any part of his authority; and

absolute as this was, he found the charge so heavy, that he called upon the Lord to share it with him, or to relieve him from it altogether. Soon after you went out, an Unitarian Priest, upon my asking what you were going to do in that wild country, said, you were going to form a community, who would be "content to worship one "God." "I hope not," said I, "for he will have "plagues enough without adding a priest to the number." But, perhaps, I was wrong: for Aaron was of great assistance to the leader of the Israelites.

582. As if the inevitable effects of disappointment and hardship were not sufficient, you had, too, a sort of partnership in the leaders. This is sure to produce feuds and bitterness in the long run. Partnershipsovereignties have furnished the world with numerous instances of poisonings and banishments and rottings in prison. It is as much as merchants, who post their books every Sunday, can do to get along without quarrelling. Of man and wife, though they are flesh of flesh and bone of bone, the harmony is not always quite perfect, except in France, where the husband is the servant, and in Germany and Prussia, where the wife is the slave. But, as for a partnership sovereignty without disagreement, there is but one single instance upon record; that, I mean, was of the two kings of Brentford, whose cordiality was, you know, so perfect, that they both smelt to the same nosegay. This is, my dear Sir, no bantering. I am quite serious. It is impossible that separations should not take place, and equally impossible that the neighbourhood should not be miserable. This is not the way to settle in America. The way is, to go and sit yourself down amongst the natives. They are already settled. They can lend you what you want to borrow, and happy they are always to do it. And, which is the great thing of all great things, you have their women for your women to commune with!

583. Rapp, indeed, has done great things; but Rapp has the authority of Moses and that of Aaron united in his own person. Besides, Rapp's community observe in reality that celibacy, which Monks and Nuns pretend to, though I am not going to take my oath, mind, that none of the tricks of the Convent are ever played in

the tabernacles of Harmony. At any rate, Rapp secures the effects of celibacy; first, an absence of the expense attending the breeding and rearing of children, and, second, unremitted labour of woman as well as man. But, where, in all the world, is the match of this to be found? Where else shall we look for a Society composed of persons willing and able to forego the gratification of the most powerful propensity of nature, for the sake of getting money together? Where else shall we look for a band of men and women who love money better than their own bodies? Better than their souls we find people enough to love money; but, who ever before heard of a set that preferred the love of money to that of their bodies? Who, before, ever conceived the idea of putting a stop to the procreation of children, for the sake of saving the expense of bearing and breeding them? This Society, which is a perfect prodigy and monster, ought to have the image of MAMMON in their place of worship; for that is the object of their devotion, and not the God of nature. Yet the persons belonging to this unnatural association are your nearest neighbours. The masculine things here, called women, who have imposed barrenness on themselves, out of a pure love of gain, are the nearest neighbours of the affectionate, tender-hearted wives and mothers and daughters, who are to inhabit your colony, and who are, let us thank God, the very reverse of the petticoated Germans of Harmony.

584. In such a situation, with so many circumstances to annoy, what happiness can an English family enjoy in that country, so far distant from all that resembles what they have left behind them? "The fair Enchant-"ress, Liberty," of whom you speak with not too much rapture, they would have found in any of these States, and, in a garb, too, by which they would have recognised her. Where they now are, they are free indeed; but their freedom is that of the wild animals in your woods. It is not freedom, it is no government. The Gipsies, in England, are free; and any one, who has a mind to live in a cave, or cabin, in some hidden recess of our Hampshire forests, may be free too. The English farmer, in the Illinois, is, indeed, beyond the reach of

the Boroughmongers; and so is the man that is in the grave. When it was first proposed, in the English Ministry, to drop quietly the title of King of France in the enumeration of our king's titles, and, when it was stated to be an expedient likely to tend to a peace, Mr. Windham, who was then a member of the Cabinet, said: "As this is a measure of safety, and as, doubtless, "we shall hear of others of the same cast, what think "you of going under ground at once?" It was a remark enough to cut the liver out of the hearers; but Pitt and his associates had no livers. I do not believe, that any twelve Journeymen, or Labourers, in England would have voted for the adoption of this mean and despicable measure.

585. If, indeed, the Illinois were the only place out of the reach of the Borough-grasp; and, if men are resolved to get out of that reach; then, I should say, Go to the Illinois, by all means. But, as there is a country, a settled country, a free country, full of kind neighbours, full of all that is good, and when this country is to be traversed in order to get at the acknowledged hardships of the Illinois, how can a sane mind

lead an English Farmer into the expedition?

586. It is the enchanting damsel that makes the knight encounter the hair-breadth scapes, the sleeping on the ground, the cooking with cross-sticks to hang the pot on. It is the Prairie, that pretty French word, which means green grass bespangled with daisies and cowslips! Oh, God! What delusion! And that a man of sense; a man of superior understanding and talent; a man of honesty, honour, humanity, and lofty sentiment, should be the cause of this delusion; I, my dear Sir, have seen Prairies many years ago, in America, as fine as yours, as fertile as yours, though not so extensive. I saw those Prairies settled on by American Loyalists, who were carried, with all their goods and tools to the spot, and who were furnished with four years' provisions, all at the expense of England; who had the lands given them; tools given them; and who were thus seated down on the borders of creeks, which gave them easy communication with the inhabited plains near the sea. The settlers that I particularly knew were

Connecticut men. Men with families of sons. Men able to do as much in a day at the works necessary in their situation as so many Englishmen would be able to do in a week. They began with a shed; then rose to a log-house; and next to a frame-house; all of their own building. I have seen them manure their land with Salmon caught in their creeks, and with Pigeons caught on the land itself. It will be a long while before you will see such beautiful Corn-fields as I saw there. Yet nothing but the danger and disgrace which attended their return to Connecticut prevented their returning, though there they must have begun the world anew. I saw them in their log-huts, and saw them in their frame-houses. They had overcome all their difficulties as settlers; they were under a government which required neither tax nor service from them; they were as happy as people could be as to ease and plenty; but, still, they sighed for Connecticut; and especially the women, young as well as old, though we, gay fellows with worsted or silver lace upon our bright red coats, did our best to make them happy by telling them entertaining stories about Old England, while we drank their coffee and grog by gallons, and eat their fowls, pigs and sausages and sweet-meats, by wheel-barrow loads; for, though we were by no means shy, their hospitality far exceeded our appetites. I am an old hand at the work of settling in wilds. I have, more than once or twice, had to begin my nest and go in, like a bird, making it habitable by degrees; and, if I, or, if such people as my old friends above-mentioned, with every thing found for them and brought to the spot, had difficulties to undergo, and sighed for home even after all the difficulties were over, what must be the lot of an English Farmer's family in the Illinois?

587. All this I told you, my dear Sir, in London just before your departure. I begged of you and Mr. Richard Flower both, not to think of the Wildernesses. I begged of you to go to within a day's ride of some of these great cities, where your ample capital and your great skill could not fail to place you upon a footing, at least, with the richest amongst the most happy and enlightened Yeomanry in the world; where you would find every one

to praise the improvements you would introduce, and nobody to envy you any thing that you might acquire. Where you would find society as good, in all respects, as that which you had left behind you. Where you would find neighbours ready prepared for you far more generous and hospitable than those in England can be, loaded and pressed down as they are by the inexorable hand of the Borough-villains. I offered you a letter (which, I believe, I sent you), to my friends the Pauls. "But," said I, "you want no letter. Go into Phila-"delphia, or Bucks, or Chester, or Montgomery county; tell any of the Quakers, or any body else, that you "are an English Farmer, come to settle amongst them; and, I'll engage that you will instantly have friends and neighbours as good and as cordial as those that

" vou leave in England."

588. At this very moment, if this plan had been pursued, you would have had a beautiful farm of two or three hundred acres. Fine stock upon it feeding on Swedish Turnips. A house overflowing with abundance; comfort, ease, and, if you choose, elegance, would have been your inmates; libraries, public and private within your reach; and a communication with England much more quick and regular than that which

you now have even with Pittsburgh.

589. You say, that " Philadelphians know nothing " of the Western Countries." Suffer me, then, to say, that you know nothing of the Atlantic States, which, indeed, is the only apology for your saying, that the Americans have no mutton fit to eat, and regard it only as a thing fit for dogs. In this island every farmer has sheep. I kill fatter lamb than I ever saw in England, and the fattest mutton I ever saw, was in company with Mr. Harline, in Philadelphia market last winter. At Brighton, near Boston, they produced, at a cattle show this fall, an ox of two thousand seven hundred pounds weight, and sheep much finer, than you and I saw at the Smithfield Show in 1814. Mr. Judge Lawrence of this county, has kept, for seven years, an average of five hundred Merinos on his farm of one hundred and fifty acres, besides raising twenty acres of Corn and his usual pretty large proportion of grain!

Can your Western Farmers beat that? Yes, in extent, as the surface of five dollars beats that of a guinea.

590. I suppose that Mr. Judge Lawrence's farm, close by the side of a bay that gives him two hours of water carriage to New York; a farm with twenty acres of meadow, real prairie; a gentleman's house and garden; barns, sheds, cider-house, stables, coach-house, corn-cribs, and orchards that may produce from four to eight thousand bushels of apples and pears: I suppose, that this farm is worth three hundred dollars an acre: that is, forty-five thousand dollars; or, about twelve or thirteen thousand pounds.

991. Now, then, let us take a look at your estimate

of the expenses of sitting down in the prairies.

Copy from my Memorandum Book.

592. Estimate of money required for the comfortable establishment of my family on Bolting House, now English, prairie; on which the first instalment is paid. About 720 acres of wood-land, and 720 prairie;—the latter to be chiefly grass:—

	Dollars.
Second instalment, August 1819, 720	
Third ditto August 1820, 720	MARIA STATE
Fourth ditto August 1821, 720	Tarres.
The miles of the second residence of the second reside	2,160
Dwelling-house and appurtenances	4,500
other buildings	1,500
Other buildings 4680 rods of fencing, viz. 3400 on the prairie,	
and 1200 round the woodland	1,170
Sundry wells, 200 dollars; gates, 100 dollars;	
cabins, 200 dollars	500
100 head of cattle, 900 dollars; 20 sows, &c.	The backs
100 dollars; sheep, 1000 dollars	2,000
Ploughs, wagons, &c. and sundry tools and im-	
plements	270
Housekeeping until the land supplies us	1,000
Shepherd one year's wages, herdsmen one year,	
and sundry other labourers	1,000
One cabinet-maker, one wheel-wright, one year,	
making furniture and implements, 300 dollars	
each	600
Carried over]	4,700

Brought over	Dollars. 14,700
Sundry articles of furniture, ironmongery, pot-	
tery, glass, &c	500
Sundries, fruit trees, &c	
First instalment already paid	amount in
Five horses on hand, worth	
Expense of freight and carriage of linen, bed-	
ding, books, clothing, &c	1,000
Value of articles brought from England	4,500
Voyage and journey	
	23,820
23,820 dollars=£5,359	THE VENEZUE OF THE PARTY
Allow about 600 dollars more for seed and corn	
€5,500	The state of the s

593. So, here is more than one-third of the amount of Mr. Judge Lawrence's farm. To be sure, there are only about 18,000 dollars expended on land, buildings, and getting at them; but, what a life is that which you are to lead for a thousand dollars a-year, when two good domestic servants will cost four hundred of the money? Will you live like one of the Yeomen of your rank here? Then, I assure you, that your domestics and groceries (the latter three times as dear as they are here) and crockery-ware (equally dear) will more than swallow up that pitiful sum. You allow six thousand dollars for buildings. Twice the sum would not put you, in this respect, upon a footing with Mr. Lawrence. His land is all completely fenced and his grain in the ground. His apple-trees have six thousand bushels of apples in their buds, ready to come out in the spring; and, a large part of these to be sold at a high price to go on ship-board. But, what is to give you his market? What is to make your pork, as soon as killed, sell for 9 or 10 dollars a hundred, and your cows at 45 or 50 dollars each, and your beef at 7 or 8 dollars a hundred, and your corn at a dollar, and wheat at two dollars a bushel?

594. However, happiness is in the mind; and, if it be necessary to the gratification of your mind to inhabit

a wilderness and be the owner of a large tract of land, you are right to seek and enjoy this gratification. But, for the plain, plodding English Farmer, who simply seeks safety for his little property, with some addition to it for his children; for such a person to cross the Atlantic states in search of safety, tranquillity and gain in the Illinois, is, to my mind, little short of madness. Yet, to this mad enterprize is he allured by your captivating statements, and which statements become decisive in their effects upon his mind, when they are reduced to figures. This, my dear Sir, is the part of your writings, which has given me most pain. You have not meant to deceive; but you have first practised a deceit upon yourself, and then upon others. All the disadvantages you state; but, then, you accompany the statement by telling us how quickly and how easily they will be overcome. Salt, Mr. HULME finds, even at ZANESVILLE, at two dollars and a half a bushel; but, you tell us, that it soon will be at three quarters of a dollar. And thus it

goes all through.

595. I am happy, however, that you have given us figures in your account of what an English farmer may do with two thousand pounds. It is alluring, it is fallacious, it tends to disappointment, misery, ruin and broken hearts; but it is open and honest in intention, and it affords us the means of detecting and exposing the fallacy. Many and many a family have returned to New England after having emigrated to the West in search of fine estates. They, able workmen, exemplary livers, have returned to labour in their native States amongst their relations and old neighbours; but, what are our poor ruined countrymen to do, when they become pennyless? If I could root my country from my heart, common humanity would urge me to make an humble attempt to dissipate the charming delusions, which have, without your perceiving it, gone forth from your sprightly and able pen, and which delusions are the more dangerous on account of your justly high and well-known character for understanding and integrity.

596. The statement, to which I allude, stands as fol-

lows, in your tenth Letter from the Illinois.

597. A capital of 20001. sterling, (8,889 dollars,

	111.
may be invested on a section of such land, in th	ne fol-
lowing manner, viz.	
Aldburg to party of the party o	ollars.
Purchase of the land, 640 acres, at 2 dollars	
per acre	1280
per acre House and buildings, exceedingly convenient	
and comfortable, may be built for	1500
A rail fence round the woods, 1000 rods, at 25	in the co
cents per rod	250
About 1800 rods of ditch and bank, to divide the	200
arable land into 10 fields	600
Planting 1800 rods of live fence	
Fruit trees for orchard, &c	150
Harses and other live steek	100
Horses and other live stock	1500
Implements and furniture	1000
Provision for one year, and sundry incidental	
charges	1000
Sundry articles of linen, books, apparel, imple-	
ments, &c. brought from England	1000
Carriage of ditto, suppose 2000 lbs. at 10 dollars	
per cwt	200
Voyage and travelling expenses of one person,	Dept. Link
suppose	309
· look after greeness impostracognetts of mount in	Variable
Note The first instalment on the 1-1' one	8889
Note.—The first instalment on the land is 320	
dollars, therefore 960 dollars of the purchase	
money remain in hand to be applied to the	
expenses of cultivation, in addition to the	
sums above stated.	
Expenditure of first Year.	
	The state of the s
Breaking up 100 acres, 2 dollars per acre	200
Indian corn for seed, 5 barrels, (a barrel is five	d older
bushels) Planting ditto	10
Planting ditto	25
Horse-hoeing ditto, one dollar per acre	100
Harvesting ditto, 12 dollar per acre	150
Ploughing the same land for wheat, 1 dollar per	OCT SEE
acre	100
Seed wheat, sowing and harrowing	175
Incidental expenses	240
Complete the St. Springer Lange to Latinea R.	-
Comment of the Commen	1000

Part III.] MORRIS BIRKBECK, Esq.	315
Produce of first Year. 100 acres of Indian corn, 50 bushels (or 10 bar-	Dollars.
reisi per goro of 9 dollars I	
	2000
Expenditure of second Year.	1000
Breaking up 100 acres for Indian corn, with	
expenses on that crop	10=
expenses on that crop	485 350
The second section with the second se	275
Incidents	290
	1400
Produce of second Year.	
100 acres Indian corn, 10 barrels per	11 3419
acre, 2 dollars per barrel 2000 100 acres wheat, 20 bushels per acre,	
75 dollars per barrel	2500
Net produce	2100
Expenditure of third Year.	
Breaking up 100 acres as before, with expenses	
on crop of Indian corn Ploughing 100 acros of wheet at 111 6	485
Ploughing 100 acres of wheat stubble for Indian	700
Horse-hoeing, harvesting, &c. ditto	100
Harvesting and threshing 100 acres wheat	285 350
Dung-carting 100 acres for wheat after second	111111111111111111111111111111111111111
crop of Indian corn	200
Ploughing 200 acres wheat, seed, &c. Incidents	550
Incidents	330
Produce of third Year.	2300
200 acres of Indian corn. 10 barrels per	1
acre, 2 dollars per barrel . 4000	
100 acres wheat, 20 bushels per acre,	
Superior of charge (s.) provided (contraction of the contraction of th	-
Net produce	3200
Expenditure of fourth Year.	400,00
As the third	2330
Carried over	2300
P 2	

100	rt III.
more	2300 350
rperor by self wassing	50 2700
4000 3000-	-7000
oduce	4300
Dollars. 2000	teller de éd trog l
5500 7000 8000	sector Freed riving
1,400	1650
d set-	
profit y more to Вов	The second second
you are f too, g so ex	unin- But,
and sta difficult ue in n	ringly ty that
lue to	its in-
C	table

316	LETTER TO	and in	[Part III.
			Dollars.
and I die	Brought of	over	. 2300
Harvesting and thre	eshing 100	acres mo	ore
wheat			. 350
Additional incidents			
			2700
Produc	e of fourth	Year.	
200 acres Indian com	, as above .	40	000
200 acres wheat .		30	00-7000
		Net produ	ice 4300
	Summary.	The state of the s	COURT CSTUDE
	EXPENSES.	PROI	DUCE.
T7:	Dollars		llars.
First year			
Second Third	2200		
Fourth			
Tourist	dach a super	180	The second second
House-keeping and o	other	391	nam made
expenses for four y		11,4	100
Net proceeds per ann		THE RESERVE TO SECURE A SECURE ASSESSMENT AND ADDRESS OF THE PERSON ADDRESS OF THE PERSON AND ADDRESS OF THE PERSON AND ADDRESS OF THE PERSON AND AD	THE RESERVE OF THE PARTY OF THE
Increasing value of la			
tlements, half a doll	lar per ann.	on 640 acr	es 320
	Annua	al clear pro	ofit 1970
598. "Twenty mor	e · kill 'em!	Twenty	nore · kill
"them too!" No: I	will not com	pare von to	BOBADIL:
for he was an intention	nal deceiver	; and you	are unin-
tentionally deceiving	others and	yourself	too. But,
really, there is in this	statement so	omething s	o extrava-
gant; so perfectly wi	ld; so ridici	ulously and	l staringly
untrue, that it is not wi	thout a great	deal of diff	iculty that
all my respect for you	personally c	an subdue	in me the
temptation to creat it	with the con	nempt due	to its in-
trinsic demerits.	1 0 0	Con April 10	STAR DO

599. I shall notice only a few of the item you say, "exceedingly convenient and comfortable, "together with farm-buildings, may be built for 1500 "dollars." Your own intended house you estimate at 4500, and your out-buildings at 1500. So that, if this house of the farmer (an English farmer, mind) and his

buildings, are to be "exceedingly convenient and com-" fortable," for 1500 dollars, your house and buildings must be on a scale, which, if not perfectly princely, must savour a good deal of aristocratical distinction. But, this if relieves us; for even your house, built of pine timber and boards, and covered with cedar shingles, and finished only as a good plain farm-house ought to be, will, if it be thirty-six feet front, thirty-four feet deep, two rooms in front, kitchen, and wash-house behind, four rooms above, and a cellar beneath; yes, this house alone, the bare empty house, with doors and windows suitable, will cost you more than six thousand dollars. I state this upon good authority. I have taken the estimate of a building carpenter. "What Car-" penter ?" you will say. Why, a Long Island carpenter, and the house to be built within a mile of Brooklyn, or two miles of New York. And this is giving you all the advantage, for here the pine is cheaper than with you; the shingles cheaper; the lime and stone and brick as cheap or cheaper; the glass, iron, lead, brass and tin, all at half or a quarter of the Prairie price: and, as to labour, if it be not cheaper here than with you, men would do well not to go so far in search of high wages!

600. Let no simple Englishman imagine, that here, at and near New York, in this dear place, we have to pay for the boards and timber brought from a distance; and that you, the happy people of the land of daisies and cowslips, can cut down your own good and noble oak trees upon the spot, on your own estates, and turn them into houses without any carting. Let no simple Englishman believe such idle stories as this. To dissipate all such notions, I have only to tell him, that the American farmers on this island, when they have buildings to make or repair, go and purchase the pine timber and boards, at the very same time that they cut down their own oak trees and cleave up and burn them as firewood! This is the universal practice in all the parts of America that I have ever seen. What is the cause? Pine wood is cheaper, though bought, than the oak is without buying. This fact, which nobody can deny, is a complete proof that you gain no advantage from being

in woods, as far as building is concerned. And the truth is, that the boards and plank, which have been used in the Prairie, have actually been brought from the Wabash, charged with ten miles rough land carriage: how far they may have come down the Wabash I cannot tell.

601. Thus, then, the question is settled that building must be cheaper here than in the Illinois. If, therefore, a house, 36 by 34 feet, cost here 6000 dollars, what can a man get there for 1500 dollars? A miserable hole, and no more. But, here are to be farmbuildings and all, in the 1500 dollars' worth! A barn, 40 feet by 30, with floor, and with stables in the sides, cannot be built for 1500 dollars, leaving out wagonhouse, corn-crib, cattle-hovels, yard fences, pig-sties, smoke house, and a great deal more! And yet, you say, that all these, and a farm-house into the bargain, all "exceedingly comfortable and convenient," may be had for 1500 dollars!

602. Now, you know, my dear Sir, that this is said in the face of all America. Farmers are my readers. They all understand these matters. They are not only good, but impartial judges; and I call upon you to contradict, or even question, my statements, if you can.

603. Do my eyes deceive me? Or do I really see one hundred and fifty dollars put down as the expense of "planting one thousand eight hundred rod of live "fence"? That is to say, nine cents, or fourpence halfpenny sterling a rod! What plants? Whence to come? Drawn out of the woods, or first sown in a nursery? Is it seed to be sown? Where are the seeds to come from? No levelling of the top of the bank; no drill; no sowing; no keeping clean for a year or two: or, all these for nine cents a rod, when the same works cost half a dollar a rod in England!

604. Manure too! And do you really want manure then? And, where, I pray you, are you to get manure for 100 acres? But, supposing you to have it, do you seriously mean to tell us that you will carry it on for two dollars an acre? The carrying on, indeed, might perhaps be done for that, but who pays for the filling and for the spreading? Ah! my dear Sir, I can well

imagine your feelings at putting down the item of dung-carting, trifling as you make it appear upon paper. You now recollect my words when I last had the pleasure of seeing you, in Catherine-street, a few days before the departure of us both. I then dreaded the dung-cart, and recommended the Tullian System to you, by which you would have the same crops every year, without manure; but, unfortunately for my advice, you sincerely believed your land would be already too rich, and that your main difficulty would be, not to cart on manure, but to cart off the produce!

605. After this, it appears unnecessary for me to notice any other part of this Transalleganian romance, which I might leave to the admiration of the Edinburgh Reviewers, whose knowledge of these matters is quite equal to what they have discovered as to the Funding System and Paper Money. But when I think of the flocks of poor English Farmers, who are tramping away towards an imaginary, across a real land of milk and honey, I cannot lay down the pen, till I have no-

ticed an item or two of the produce.

606. The farmer is to have 100 acres of Indian corn, the first year. The minds of you gentlemen who cross the Allegany seem to expand, as it were, to correspond with the extent of the horizon that opens to your view; but, I can assure you, that if you were to talk to a farmer on this side of the mountains of a field of Corn of a hundred acres during the first year of a settlement, with grassy land and hands scarce, you would frighten him into a third-day ague. In goes your Corn, however! "Twenty more: kill 'em!" Nothing but ploughing: no harrowing; no marking; and only a horse-hoeing, during the summer, at a dollar an acre. The planting is to cost only a quarter of a dollar an acre. The planting will cost a dollar an acre. The horse-hoeing in your grassy land, two dollars. The hand-hoeing, which must be well done, or you will have no corn, two dollars; for, in spite of your teeth, your rampant natural grass will be up before your corn, and a man must go to a thousand hills to do half an acre a day. It will cost two dollars to harvest a hundred bushels of corn ears. So that here are about 400 dollars of expenses on the corn alone, to be added. A trifle, to be sure, when we are looking through the Transalleganian glass, which diminishes out-goings and magnifies incomings. However, here are four hundred dollars.

607. In goes the plough for wheat? "In him "again! Twenty more!" But, this is in October, mind. Is the Corn off? It may be; but, where are the four hundred wagon loads of corn stalks? A prodigiously fine thing is this forest of fodder, as high and as thick as an English coppice. But, though it be of no use to you, who have the meadows without bounds, this coppice must be removed, if you please, before

you plough for wheat!

608. Let us pause here, then; let us look at the battalion, who are at work; for, there must be little short of a Hessian Battalion. Twenty men and twenty horses may husk the Corn, cut and cart the stalks, plough and sow and harrow for the wheat; twenty two-legged and twenty four-legged animals may do the work in the proper time; but, if they do it, they must work well. Here is a goodly group to look at, for an English Farmer, without a penny in his pocket; for all his money is gone long ago, even according to your own estimate; and, here, besides the expense of cattle and tackle, are 600 dollars, in bare wages, to be paid in a month! You and I both have forgotten the shelling of the Corn, which, and putting it up, will come to 50 dollars more at the least, leaving the price of the barrel to be paid for by the purchaser of the Corn.

609. But, what did I say! Shell the Corn! It must go into the Cribs first. It cannot be shelled immediately. And it must not be thrown into heaps. It must be put into Cribs. I have had made out an estimate of the expense of the Cribs for ten thousand bushels of Corn Ears: that is the crop; and the Cribs will cost 570 dollars! Though, mind, the farmer's house, barns, stables, wagon-house, and all, are to cost but 1500 dollars! But, the third year, our poor simpleton is to have 200 acres of corn! "Twenty more:

" kill 'em!" Another 570 dollars for Cribs!

610. However, crops now come tumbling on him

so fast, that he must struggle hard not to be stifled with his own superabundance. He has now got 200 acres of corn and 100 acres of wheat, which latter he has, indeed, had one year before! Oh, madness! But. to proceed. To get in these crops and to sow the wheat, first taking away 200 acres of English coppice in stalks, will, with the dunging for the wheat, require, at least, fifty good men, and forty good horses or oxen, for thirty days. Faith! when farmer Simpleton sees all this (in his dreams I mean), he will think himself a farmer of the rank of Jos, before Satan beset that example of patience, so worthy of imitation, and so seldom imitated.

611. Well, but Simpleton must bustle to get in his wheat. In, indeed! What can cover it, but the canopy of heaven? A barn! It will, at two English wagon loads of sheaves to an acre, require a barn a hundred feet long, fifty feet wide, and twenty-three feet high up to the eaves; and this barn with two proper floors, will cost more than seven thousand dollars. He will put it in stacks; let him add six men to his battalion then. He will thrash it in the field; let him add ten more men! Let him, at once, send and press the Harmonites into his service, and make RAPP march at their head, for, never will he by any other means get in the crop; and, even then, if he pay fair wages, he will lose by it.

612. After the crop is in and the seed sown, in the fall, what is to become of Simpleton's men till Corn ploughing and planting time in the spring ! And, then, when the planting is done, what is to become of them till harvest time? Is he, like BAYES, in the Rehearsal. to lay them down when he pleases, and when he pleases make them rise up again! To hear you talk about these crops, and, at other times to hear you advising others to bring labourers from England, one would think you, for your own part, able, like CAD-Mus, to make men start up out of the earth. How would one ever have thought it possible for infatuation like this to seize hold of a mind like yours?

613. When I read in your Illinois Letters, that you had prepared horses, ploughs, and other things,

for putting in a hundred acres of Corn in the Spring, how I pitied you! I saw all your plagues, if you could not see them. I saw the grass choking your plants; the grubs eating them; and you fretting and turning from the sight with all the pangs of sanguine baffled hope. I expected you to have ten bushels, instead of fifty, upon an acre. I saw your confusion, and participated in your mortification. From these feelings I was happily relieved by the Journal of our friend Hulme, who informs the world, and our countrymen in particular, that you had not, in July last, any Corn at all growing!

614. Thus it is to reckon one's chickens before they are hatched: and thus the Transalleganian dream vanishes. You have been deceived. A warm heart, a lively imagination, and I know not what caprice about republicanism, have led you into sanguine expectations and wrong conclusions. Come, now! Confess it like yourself; that is, like a man of sense and spirit: like an honest and fair-dealing John Bull. To err belongs to all men, great as well as little; but to be ashamed to confess error, belongs only to the

latter.

615. Great as is my confidence in your candour, I can however, hardly hope wholly to escape your anger for having so decidedly condemned your publications; but, I do hope, that you will not be so unjust as to impute my conduct to any base self-interested motive. I have no private interest, I can have no such interest in endeavouring to check the mad torrent towards the West. I own nothing in these States, and never shall; and whether English Farmers push on into misery and ruin, or stop here in happiness and prosperity, to me, as far as private interest goes, it must be the same. As to the difference in our feelings and notions about country, about allegiance, and about forms of government, this may exist without any, even the smallest degree of personal dislike. I was no hypocrite in England; I had no views farther than those which I professed. I wanted nothing for myself but the fruit of my own industry and talent, and I wished nothing for my country but its liberties and laws, which say, that the people

shall be fairly represented. England has been very happy and free; her greatness and renown have been surpassed by those of no nation in the world; her wise, just, and merciful laws form the basis of that freedom which we here enjoy, she has been fertile beyond all rivalship in men of learning and men devoted to the cause of freedom and humanity; her people, though proud and domineering, yield to no people in the world in frankness, good faith, sincerity, and benevolence: and I cannot but know, that this state of things has existed, and that this people has been formed, under a government of king, lords, and commons. Having this powerful argument of experience before me, and seeing no reason why the thing should be otherwise, I have never wished for republican government in England; though, rather than that the present tyrannical oligarchy should continue to trample on king and people, I would gladly see the whole fabric torn to atoms, and trust to chance for something better, being sure that nothing could be worse. But, if I am not a republican; if I think my duty towards England indefeasible; if I think that it becomes me to abstain from any act which shall seem to say I abandon her, and especially in this her hour of distress and oppression; and, if, in all these points, I differ from you, I trust that to this difference no part of the above stric-- tures will be imputed, but that the motive will be fairly inferred from the act, and not the act imputed unfairly to any motive. I am, my dear Sir, with great respect for your talents as well as character,

Your most obedient

And most humble servant,

WM. COBBETT.

TO

MORRIS BIRKBECK, Esq.

OF ENGLISH PRAIRIE, ILLINOIS TERRITORY.

LETTER II.

North Hempstead, Long Island, 15th Dec. 1818.

616. Being, when I wrote my former Letter to you in great haste to conclude, in order that my son William might take it to England with him, I left unnoticed many things, which I had observed in your " Letters from the Illinois;" and which things merited pointed notice. Some of these I will notice; for, I wish to discharge all my duties towards my countrymen faithfully; and, I know of no duty more sacred, than that of warning them against pecuniary ruin and

mental misery.

617. It has always been evident to me, that the Western Countries were not the countries for English farmers to settle in: no, nor for American farmers, unless under peculiar circumstances. The settlers, who have gone from the New England States, have, in general, been able men with families of stout sons. The contracted farm in New England sells for money enough to buy the land for five or six farms in the West. These farms are made by the labour of the owners. They hire nobody. They live any how for a while. I will engage that the labour performed by one stout New England family in one year, would cost an English farmer a thousand pounds in wages. You will say, why cannot the English labour as hard as the Yankees? But, mind, I talk of a family of Yankee sons; and, besides, I have no scruple to say, that one of these will do as much work in the clearing and

fencing of a farm, and in the erection of buildings, as four or five English of the same age and size. Yet, have many of the New England farmers returned. Even they have had cause to repent of their folly. What hope is there, then, that English farmers will succeed?

618. It so happens, that I have seen new settlements formed. I have seen lands cleared. I have seen crowds of people coming and squatting down in woods or little islands, and by the sides of rivers. I have seen the log-hut raised; the bark covering put on; I have heard the bold language of the adventurers; and I have witnessed their subsequent miseries. They were just as free as you are; for, they, like you, saw no signs of the existence of any government, good or bad.

619. New settlements, particularly at so great a distance from all the conveniences and sweeteners of life, must be begun by people who labour for themselves. Money is, in such a case, almost useless. It is impossible to believe, that, after your statement about your intended hundred acres of Indian corn, you would not have had it, or, at least, a part of it, if you could; that is to say, if money would have got it. Yet you had not a single square rod. Mr. HULME, (See Journal, 28th July) says, in the way of reason for your having no crops this year, that you could purchase with more economy than you could grow! Indeed! what; would the Indian Corn have cost, then, more than the price of the Corn? Untoward observation; but perfectly true, I am convinced. There is, it is my opinion, nobody that can raise Indian Corn or Grain at so great a distance from a market to any profit at all with hired labour. Nay, this is too plain a case to be matter of opinion. I may safely assume it as an indisputable fact. For, it being notorious, that labour is as high priced with you as with us, and your statement shewing that Corn is not much more than one-third of our price, how monstrous, if you gain at all, must be the Consumers' gains here! The rent of the land here is a mere trifle more than it must be there, for the cultivated part must pay rent for the

uncultivated part. The labour, indeed, as all the world knows, is every thing. All the other expenses are not worth speaking of. What, then, must be the gains of the Long Island farmer, who sells his corn at a dollar a bushel, if you, with labour, at the Long Island price, can gain by selling Corn at the rate of five bushels for two dollars! If yours be a fine country for English farmers to migrate to, what must this be? You want no manure. This cannot last long; and, accordingly, I see that you mean to dung for wheat after the second crop of Corn. This is another of the romantic stories exposed. In Letter IV you relate the romance of manure being useless; but, in Letter X, you tell us, that you propose to use it. Land bearing crops without a manure, or, with new-culture and constant ploughing, is a romance. This I told you in Lenders.

in London; and this you have found to be true.

620. It is of little consequence what wild schemes are formed and executed by men who have property enough to carry them back; but, to invite men to go to the Illinois with a few score of pounds in their pockets, and to tell them, that they can become farmers with those pounds, appears to me to admit of no other apology than an unequivocal acknowledgment, that the inviter is mad. Yet your fifteenth Letter from the Illinois really contains such an invitation. letter is manifestly addressed to an imaginary person. It is clear that the correspondent is a feigned, or supposed, being. The letter is, I am sorry to say, I think, a mere trap to catch poor creatures with a few pounds in their pockets. I will here take the liberty to insert the whole of this letter; and will then endeavour to show the misery which it is calculated to produce, not only amongst English people, but amongst Americans who may chance to read it, and who are now living happily in the Atlantic States. The letter is dated, 24th of February, 1818, and the following are its words:

621. "Dear Sir,—When a man gives advice to his "friends, on affairs of great importance to their in"terest, he takes on himself a load of responsibility,
"from which I have always shrunk, and generally

"withdrawn. My example is very much at their ser-"vice, either for imitation or warning, as the case " may be. I must, however, in writing to you, step " a little over this line of caution, having more than "once been instrumental in helping you, not out of " your difficulties, but from one scene of perplexity to "another; I cannot help advising you to make an " effort more, and extricate yourself and family com-" pletely, by removing into this country.-When I " last saw you, twelve months ago, I did not think " favourably of your prospects: if things have turned " out better, I shall be rejoiced to hear it, and you will " not need the advice I am preparing for you. But, "if vexation and disappointments have assailed you, " as I feared, and you can honourably make your " escape, with the means of transmitting yourself hither, " and one hundred pounds sterling to spare-don't " hesitate. In six months after I shall have welcomed " you, barring accidents, you shall discover that you " are become rich, for you shall feel that you are in-"dependent: and I think that will be the most delightful " sensation you ever experienced: for, you will receive "it multiplied, as it were, by the number of your " family as your troubles now are. It is not, however, " a sort of independence that will excuse you from " labour, or afford you many luxuries, that is, costly "luxuries. I will state to you what I have learned, " from a good deal of observation and inquiry, and a " little experience; then you will form your own judg-" ment. In the first place, the voyage. That will " cost you, to Baltimore or Philadelphia, provided " you take it, as no doubt you would, in the cheapest "way, twelve guineas each, for a birth, fire, and "water, for yourself and wife, and half price, or less, " for your children, besides provisions, which you will "furnish. Then the journey. Over the mountains to " Pittsburgh, down the Ohio to Shawnee Town, and " from thence to our settlement, fifty miles north, will "amount to five pounds sterling per head .- If you " arrive here as early as May, or even June, another "five pounds per head will carry you on to that point, " where you may take your leave of dependence on any

"thing earthly but your own exertions.-At this time I " suppose you to have remaining one hundred pounds " (borrowed probably from English friends, who rely " on your integrity, and who may have directed the "interest to be paid to me on their behalf, and the " principal in due season.)-We will now, if you " please, turn it into dollars, and consider how it may " be disposed of. A hundred pounds sterling will go " a great way in dollars. With eighty dollars you will "enter a quarter section of land; that is, you will " purchase at the land-office one hundred and sixty " acres, and pay one-fourth of the purchase money, and " looking to the land to reward your pains with the " means of discharging the other three-fourths as they " become due, in two, three, and four years .- You will "build a house with fifty dollars; and you will find it " extremely comfortable and convenient, as it will be " really and truly yours. Two horses will cost, with " harness and plough, one hundred .- Cows, and hogs, " and seed corn, and fencing, with other expenses, will " require the remaining two hundred and ten dollars .-"This beginning, humble as it appears, is affluence " and splendour, compared with the original outfit of " settlers in general. Yet no man remains in poverty, "who possesses even moderate industry and economy, " and especially of time.-You would of course bring "with you your sea-bedding and store of blankets, for " you will need them on the Ohio; and you should " leave England with a good stock of wearing apparel. "Your luggage must be composed of light articles, " on account of the costly land-carriage from the " Eastern port to Pittsburgh, which will be from seven " to ten dollars per 100 lbs. nearly sixpence sterling " per pound. A few simple medicines of good quality " are indispensable, such as calomel, bark in powder, " castor oil, calcined magnesia, laudanum; they may " be of the greatest importance on the voyage and "journey, as well as after your arrival.-Change of "climate and situation will produce temporary indis-" position, but with prompt and judicious treatment, "which is happily of the most simple kind, complaints " to which new comers are liable are seldom dangerous

"or difficult to overcome, provided due regard has been had to salubrity in the choice of their settlement, and to diet and accommodation after their arrival.

"With best regards, I remain, &c."

622. Now, my dear Sir, your mode of address, in this letter, clearly shews that you have in your eye a person above the level of common labourers. The words "Dear Sir" indicate that you are speaking to a friend, or, at least, to an intimate acquaintance; of course to a person, who has not been brought up in the habits of hard labour. And such a person it is, whom you advise and press to come to the Illinois with a hundred pounds in his pocket to become a farmer!

623. I will pass over the expenses previous to this unfortunate man and his family's arriving at the Prairies, though those expenses will be double the amount that you state them at. But he arrives with 450 dollars in his pocket. Of these he is to pay down 80 for his land, leaving three times that sum to be paid afterwards. He has 370 left. And now what is he to do? He arrives in May. So that this family has to cross the sea in winter, and the land in spring. There they are, however, and now what are they to do? They are to have built for 50 dollars a house "EXTREMELY COM-"FORTABLE AND CONVENIENT:"-the very words that you use in describing the farmer's house, that was to cost, with out-buildings, 1500 dollars! However, you have described your own cabin, whence we may gather the meaning which you attach to the word comfortable. "This cabin is built of round straight " logs, about a foot in diameter, laying upon each other, " and notched in at the corners, forming a room eighteen " feet long by sixteen; the intervals between the logs " 'chunked,' that is, filled in with slips of wood; and -" 'mudded,' that is, daubed with a plaister of mud; a " spacious chimney, built also of logs, stands like a "bastion at one end; the roof is well covered with four "hundred 'clap boards' of cleft oak, very much like "the pales used in England for fencing parks. A hole " is cut through the side called, very properly, the

"through,' for which there is a 'shutter,' made also of cleft oak, and hung on wooden hinges. All this has been executed by contract, and well executed, for twenty dollars. I have since added ten dollars to the

"cost, for the luxury of a floor and ceiling of sawn

"boards, and it is now a comfortable habitation."

624. In plain words, this is a log-hut, such as the free negroes live in about here, and a hole it is, fit only for dogs, or hogs, or cattle. Worse it is than the negro huts; for they have a bit of glass; but here is none. This miserable hole, black with smoke as it always must be, and without any window, costs, however, 30 dollars. And yet this English acquaintance of yours is to have " a house extremely comfortable and convenient for fifty " dollars." Perhaps his 50 dollars might get him a hut, or hole, a few feet longer and divided into two dens. So that here is to be cooking, wasking, eating, and sleeping all in the same "extremely convenient and "comfortable" hole! And yet, my dear Sir, you find fault of the want of cleanliness in the Americans! You have not seen "the Americans." You have not seen the nice, clean, neat houses of the farmers in this Island, in New England, in the Quaker counties of Pennsyl-You have seen nothing but the smoke-dried Ultra-montanians; and your project seems to be to make the deluded English who may follow you rivals in the attainment of the tawny colour. What is this family to do in their 50 dollar den? Suppose one or more of them sick! How are the rest to sleep by night or to eat by day?

625. However, here they are, in this miserable place, with the ship-bedding, and without even a bedstead, and with 130 dollars gone in land and house. Two horses and harness and plough are to cost 100 dollars! These, like the hinges of the door, are all to be of wood I suppose; for as to flesh and blood and bones in the form of two horses for 100 dollars, is impossible, to say nothing about the plough and harness, which would cost 20 dollars of the money. Perhaps, however, you may mean some of those horses, ploughs and sets of harness, which, at the time when you wrote this letter, you had all ready waiting for the

spring to put in your hundred acres of corn that was never put in at all! However, let this pass too. Then there are 220 dollars left, and these are to provide cows, hogs, seed, corn, fencing, and other expenses. Next come two cows (poor ones) 24 dollars; hogs, 15 dollars; seed corn, 5 dollars; fencing, suppose 20 acres only, in four plots, the stuff brought from the woods nearest adjoining. Here are 360 rods of fencing, and, if it be done so as to keep out a pig, and to keep in a pig, or a horse or cow, for less than half a dollar a rod, I will suffer myself to be made into smoked meat in the extremely comfortable house. Thus, then, here are 213 out of the 220 dollars, and this happy settler has seven whole dollars left for all "other expenses;" amongst which are the cost of cooking utensils, plates, knives and forks, tables, and stools; for, as to table-cloths and chairs, those are luxuries unbecoming "simple "republicans." But, there must be a pot to boil in; or, is that too much? May these republicans have a washing tub? Perhaps, indeed, it will become unnecessary in a short time; for, the lice will have eaten up the linen; and, besides, perhaps, real independence means stark-nakedness. But, at any rate, the hogs must have a trough; or, are they to eat at the same board with the family? Talking of eating puts me in mind of a great article; for what are the family to eat during the year and more before their land can produce ? For even if they arrive in May, they can have no crop that year. Why, they must graze with the cows in the Prairies, or snuggle with the hogs in the woods. An oven! Childish effeminacy! Oh! unleavened bread for your life. Bread, did I say? Where is the " inde-"pendent" family to get bread? Oh! no! Grass and Acorns and Roots! and, God be praised, you have plenty of water in your wells, though, perhaps, the family, with all their "independence," must be compelled to depend on your leave to get it, and fetch it half a mile into the bargain.

626. To talk seriously upon such a subject is impossible, without dealing in terms of reprobation, which it would give me great pain to employ when speaking of any act of yours. Indeed such a family will be free; but, the Indians are free, and so are the gypsies in England. And I most solemnly declare, that I would sooner live the life of a gypsy in England, than be a settler, with less than five thousand pounds, in the Illinois; and, if I had the five thousand pounds, and was resolved to exchange England for America, what in the name of common sense, should induce me to go into a wild country, when I could buy a good farm of 200 acres, with fine orchard and good house and out-buildings, and stock it completely, and make it rich as a garden, within twenty miles of a great sea-port, affording me a ready market and a high price for every

article of my produce ?

627. You have, by this time, seen more than you had seen, when you wrote your "Letters from the "Illinois." You would not, I am convinced, write such letters now. But, lest you should not do it, it is right that somebody should counteract their delusive effects; and this I endeavour to do as much for the sake of this country as for that of my own countrymen. For a good while I remained silent, hoping that few people would be deluded; but when I heard, that an old friend, and brother sportsman; a sensible, honest, frank, and friendly man, in Oxfordshire, whom I will not name, had been seized with the Illinois madness, and when I recollected, that he was one of those, who came to visit me in prison, I could no longer hold my tongue: for, if a man like him; a man of his sound understanding, could be carried away by your representations, to what an extent must the rage have gone!

628. Mr. Hulme visited you with the most friendly feelings. He agrees with you perfectly as to notions about forms of government. He wished to give a good account of your proceedings. His account is favourable; but his facts, which I am sure are true, let out what I could not have known for certainty from any other quarter. However, I do not care a farthing for the degrees of goodness or of badness; I say all new countries are all badness for English farmers. I say, that their place is near the great cities on the coast; and that every step they go beyond forty miles from those cities is a step too far. They want freedom: they

have it here. They want good land, good roads, good markets: they have them all here. What should they run rambling about a nation-making for? What have they to do about extending dominion and "taming the "wilderness?" If they speculate upon becoming founders of republics, they will, indeed, do well to get out of the reach of rivals. If they have a thirst for power, they will naturally seek to be amongst the least informed part of mankind. But, if they only want to keep their property and live well, they will take up their abode on this side of the mountains at least.

629. The grand ideas about the extension of the empire of the United States are of very questionable soundness: and they become more questionable from being echoed by the Edinburgh Reviewers, a set of the meanest politicians that ever touched pen and paper. Upon any great question, they never have been right, even by accident, which is very hard! The rapid extension of settlements to the West of the mountains, is, in my opinion, by no means favourable to the duration of the present happy Union. The conquest of Canada would have been as dangerous; but not more dangerous. A nation is never so strong and so safe as when its extreme points feel for each other as acutely as each feels for itself; and this never can be when all are not equally exposed to every danger; and especially when all the parts have not the same interests. In case of a war with England, what would become of your market down the Mississippi? That is your sole market. That way your produce must go; or you must dress yourself in skins and tear your food to hits with your hands. Yet that way your produce could not go, unless this nation were to keep up a Navy equal to that of England. Defend the country against invaders I know the people always will; but, I am not sure, that they will like internal taxes sufficient to rear and support a Navy sufficient to clear the gulf of Mexico of English squadrons. In short, it is my decided opinion, that the sooner the banks of the Ohio, the Wabash, and the Mississippi, are pretty thickly settled, the sooner the Union will be placed in jeopardy. If a war were to break out with England, even in a few years, the lands of which the Mississippi is the outlet would lose a great

part of their value. Who does not see in this fact a great cause of disunion? On this side the mountains, there are twelve hundred miles of coast to blockade: but you, gentlemen Prairie owners, are like a rat that has but one hole to go out and to come in at. You express your deep-rooted attachment to your adopted country, and I am sure you are sincere; but, still I may be allowed to doubt, whether you would cheerfully wear bear-skins, and gnaw your meat off the bones for the sake of any commercial right that the nation might go to war about. I know that you would not starve; for coffee and tea are not necessary to man's existence; but, you would like to sell your flour and pork, and would be very apt to discover reasons against a war that would prevent you from selling them. You appear to think it very wicked in the Atlantic People to feel little eagerness in promoting the increase of population to the Westward; but, you see, that, in this want of such eagerness, they may be actuated by a real love for their country. For my part, I think it would have been good policy in the Congress not to dispose of the Western Lands at all; and I am sure it would have been an act of real charity.

630. Having now performed what I deemed my duty towards my countrymen, and towards this country too, I will conclude my letter with a few observations, relative to mills, which may be of use to you; for, I know, that you will go on; and, indeed, I most sincerely wish you all the success that you can wish yourself, without doing harm to others.

631. You have no mill streams near you; and you are about to erect a wind-mill. Man is naturally prone to call to his aid whatever will save his bones labour. The water, the wind, the fire: any thing that will help him. Cattle of some sort or other were, for a long while, his great resource. But, of late, water-powers, wind-powers, fire-powers. And, indeed, wondrous things have been performed by machines of this kind. The water and the wind do not eat, and require no grooming. But, it sometimes happens, that, when all things are considered, we resort to these grand powers without any necessity for it; and that we forget how easily we could do the thing we want done, with our own

hands. The story, in Peregrine Pickle, about the Mechanic, who had invented a water machine to cut off the head of a cabbage, hardly surpassed the reality in the case of the machine, brought out in England, some years ago, for reaping wheat; nor is it much less ridiculous to see people going many miles with grist to a mill, which grist they might so easily grind at home. The hand-mills, used in England, would be invaluable with you, for a while, at least.

632. But, it is of a mill of more general utility, that I am now about to speak to you; and, I seriously recommend it to your consideration, as well as to other persons

similarly situated.

633. At Botley I lived surrounded by water-mills and wind-mills. There were eight or ten within five miles of me, and one at two hundred yards from my house. Still I thought, that it was a brutal sort of thing to be obliged to send twice to a mill, with all the uncertainties of the business, in order to have a sack of wheat or of barley ground. I sent for a millwright, and, after making all the calculations, I resolved to have a mill in my farm yard, to grind for myself, and to sell my wheat in the shape of flour. I had the mill erected in a pretty little barn, well floored with oak, and standing upon stones with caps: so that no rats or mice could annoy me. The mill was to be moved by horses, for which, to shelter them from the wet, I had a shed with a circular roof erected on the outside of the barn. Under this roof, as well as I recollect, there was a large wheel, which the horses turned, and a bar, going from that wheel, passed through into the barn, and there it put the whole machinery in motion.

634. I have no skill in mechanics. I do not, and did not, know one thing from another by its name. All I looked to was the effect; and this was complete. I had excellent flour. All my meal was ground at home. I was never bothered with sending to the mill. My ears were never after dinned with complaints about bad flour and heavy bread. It was the prettiest, most convenient, and most valuable thing I had upon my farm. It was, I think, put up in 1816, and this was one of the pleasures, from which the Borough-villains (God confound

them!) drove me in 1817. I think it cost me about a hundred pounds. I forget, whether I had sold any flour from it to the Bakers. But, independent of that, it was very valuable. I think we ground and dressed about forty bushels of wheat in a day; and, we used to work at it on wet days, and when we could not work in the fields. We never were stopped by want of wind or water. The horses were always ready; and I know, that our grinding was done at one half the expense at

which it was done by the millers.

635. The farmers and millers used to say, that I saved nothing by my mill. Indeed, gain was not my object, except in convenience. I hated the sudden calls for going to the mill. They produced irregularity; and, besides, the millers were not more honest than other people. Their mills contained all sorts of grain; and, in their confusion, we sometimes got bad flour from good wheat; an accident that never happened to us after we got our own mill. But, as to the gain, I have just received a letter from my son, informing me, that the gentleman, a farmer born and bred, who rents my farm in my absence, sells no wheat; that he grinds all; that he sells flour all round the country; and that this flour is preferred before that of the millers. I was quite delighted to hear this news of my little mill. It awakened many recollections; and I immediately thought of communicating the facts to the public, and particularly to you.

636. You will observe, that my farm is situated in the midst of mills. So that, you may be sure, that the things answers, or it would not be carried on. If it were not attended with gain, it would not be put in motion. I was convinced, that any man might grind cheaper with a horse-mill than with a water or wind-mill, and now the fact is proved. For, observe, the mill costs nothing for scite; it occupies a very small space; it is independent of wind and water; no floods or gales

can affect it.

637. Now, then, if such a mill be preferable to wind or water-mills in a place where both abound, how useful must it be in a situation like yours? Such a mill would amply supply about three hundred families, if kept con-

stantly at work. And then, it is so much more convenient than a windmill. A windmill is necessarily a most unhandy thing. The grain has to be hauled up and the flour let down. The building is a place of no capacity; and, there is great danger attending the management of it. My project is merely a neat, close barn, standing upon stones that rats and mice cannot creep up. The wagon comes to the door, the sacks are handed in and out; and every thing is so convenient and easily performed, that it is a pleasure to behold it.

638. About the construction of the mill I know nothing. I know only the effect, and that it is worked by horses, in the manner that I have described. I had no Miller. My Bailiff, whom I had made a Bailiff out of a Carpenter, I turned into a Miller; or, rather, I made him look after the thing. Any of the men, however, could do the millering very well. Any of them could make better flour than the water and wind-millers used to make for us. So that there is no mystery in the matter.

639. This country abounds in excellent millwrights. The best, I dare say, in the world; and, if I were settled here as a farmer in a large way, I would soon have a little mill, and send away my produce in flour instead of wheat. If a farmer has to send frequently to the mill, (and that he must do, if he have a great quantity of stock and a large family,) the very expense of send-

ing will pay for a mill in two or three years.

640. I shall be glad if this piece of information should be of use to any body, and particularly if it should be of any use in the Prairies; for, God knows, you will have plague enough without sending to mill, which is, of itself, no small plague even in a Christian country. About the same strength that turns a threshing machine, turned my mill. I can give no information about the construction. I know there was a hopper and stones, and that the thing made a clinking noise like the water-mills. I know that the whole affair occupied but a small space. My barn was about forty feet long and eighteen feet wide, and the mill stood at one end of it. The man who made it for me, and with whom I made a bargain in writing, wanted me to agree to a specification of the thing; but I declined having any thing to do with cogs and wheels, and persisted in stipulating for effects. And these were, that with a certain force of horses, it was to make so much fine flour in so long a time; and this bargain he very faithfully fulfilled. The price was I think seventy pounds, and the putting up and altogether made the amount about a hundred pounds. There were no heavy timbers in any part of the thing. There was not a bit of wood, in any part of the construction, so big as my thigh. The whole thing might have been carried away, all at once, very

conveniently, in one of my wagons.

641. There is another thing, which I beg leave to recommend to your attention; and that is, the use of the Broom-Corn Stalks as thatch. The coverings of barns and other out-houses with shingles makes them fiery hot in summer, so that it is dangerous to be at work in making mows near them in very hot weather. The heat they cause in the upper parts of houses, though there be a ceiling under them is intolerable. In the very hot weather I always bring my bed down to the ground-floor. Thatch is cool. Cool in summer and warm in winter. Its inconveniences are danger from fire and want of durability. The former is no great deal greater than that of shingles. The latter may be wholly removed by the use of the Broom-Corn Stalks. In England a good thatch of wheat-straw will last twelve or fifteen years. If this straw be reeded, as they do it in the counties of Dorset and Devon, it will last thirty years; and it is very beautiful. The little town of CHARMOUTH, which is all thatched, is one of the prettiest places I ever saw. What beautiful thatching might be made in this country, where the straw is so sound and so clean! A Dorsetshire thatcher might, upon this very island, make himself a decent fortune in a few years. They do cover barns with straw here sometimes; but how one of our thatchers would laugh at the work! Let me digress here, for a moment, to ask you if you have got a sow-spayer? We have no such man here.

What a loss arises from this! What a plague it is. We cannot keep a whole farrow of pigs, unless we breed from all the sows! They go away: they plague us to death. Many a man in England, now as poor as an owlet, would (if he kept from the infernal drink) become rich here in a short time. These sow-gelders, as they call them, swarm in England. Any clown of a fellow follows this calling, which is hardly two degrees above rat-catching and mole-catching: and yet there i no such person here, where swine are so numerous, and where so many millions are fatted for exportation

It is very strange!

642. To return to the thatching: Straw is not so durable as one could wish: besides, in very high winds, it is liable, if not reeded, to be ruffed a good deal; and the reeding, which is almost like counting the straws one by one, is expensive. In England we sometimes thatch with reeds, which in Hampshire, are called spear. This is an aquatic plant. It grows in the water, and will grow no where else. When stout it is of the thickness of a small cane at the bottom, and is about four or five feet long. I have seen a thatch of it, which, with a little patching, had lasted upwards of fifty years. In gentlemen's gardens, there are sometimes hedges or screens made of these reeds. They last, if well put up, half a century, and are singularly neat, while they parry the wind much better than paling or walls, because there is no eddy proceeding from their repulsion. They are generally put round those parts of the garden where the hot-beds are.

643. Now, the Broom-Corn far surpasses the reeds in all respects. I intend, in my Book on Gardening, to give a full account of the applicability of this plant to garden-uses both here and in England; for, as to the reeds, they can seldom be had, and a screen of them comes, in most parts of England, to more money than a paling of oak. But, the Broom-Corn! What an useful thing! What quantities upon an acre of land Ten feet high, and more durable than reeds! The seed-stems, with a bit of the stem of the plant, make the brooms. These, I hear, are now sent to England.

Q 2

I have often talked of it in England as a good traffic. We here sweep stables and streets with what the English sweep their carpets with! You can buy as good a broom at New York for eightpence sterling as you can buy in London for five shillings sterling, and the freight cannot exceed twopence or threepence, if sent without handles. I bought a clothes-brush, an English clothes-brush, the other day for three shillings sterling. It was made of a farthing's worth of alder wood and of half a farthing's worth of Broom-Corn. An excellent brush. Better than bristles. I have Broom-Corn and Seed-Stems enough to make fifty thousand such brushes. I really think I shall send it to England. It is now lying about my barn, and the chickens are living upon the seeds. This plant demands greater heat even than the Indian Corn. It would hardly ripen its seed in England. Indeed it would not. But, if well managed, it would produce a prodigious crop of materials for reed-hedges and thatch. It is of a substance (I mean the main stalk) between that of a cane and that of a reed. It has joints precisely like those of the canes, which you may have seen the Boroughmonger's sons and footmen strut about with, called bamboos. The seed-stalks, which make the brooms and brushes, might not get so mature in England as to be so good as they are here for those uses: but, I have no doubt, that, in any of the warm lands in Surrey, or Kent, or Hampshire, a man might raise upon an acre a crop worth several hundred pounds. The very stout stalks, if properly harvested and applied, would last nearly as long as the best hurdle rods. What beautiful screens they would make in gardens and pleasure grounds! Ten feet long, and straight as a gun stick! I shall send some of the seed to England this year, and cause a trial to be made; and I will, in my Gardening Book, give full instructions for the cultivation. Of this book, which will be published soon, I would, if you lived in this world, send you a copy. These are the best uses of maritime intercourse: the interchange of plants, animals, and improvements of all sorts. I am doing my best to repay this country for the protection

Part HI.

which it has given me against our indemnified tyrants. "Cobbeti's pigs and Swedish turnips" will be talked of long after the bones of Ellenborough, Gibbs, Sidmouth, Castlereagh and Jenkinson will be rotten, and their names forgotten, or only remembered when my "trash" shall.

644. This is a rambling sort of Letter. I now come back to the Broom-Corn for thatch. Sow it in rows about five feet asunder; or, rather, on ridges, a foot wide at the top, with an interval of five feet; let the plants stand all over this foot wide, at about three inches apart, or less. Keep the plants clear of weeds by a couple of weedings, and plough well between the ridges three or four times during the summer. This will make the plants grow tall, while their closeness to each other will make them small in thickness of stem or stalk. It will bring them to about the thickness of fine large reeds in England, and to about twice the length; and, I will engage, that a large barn may be covered, by a good thatcher, with the stalks, in two days, and that the covering shall last for fifty years. Only think of the price of shingles and nails! Only think of the cost of tiles in England! Only think of the expense of drawing or of reeding straw in England! Only think of going into the water to collect reeds in England, even where they are to be had at all, which is in a very few places! The very first thing that I would do, if I were to settle in a place where I had buildings to erect, would be to sow some Broom-Corn; that is to say, sow some roofs. What a fine thing this would be upon the farms in England! What a convenient thing for the cottagers! Thatch for their pretty little houses, for their sties, for their fuel-house, their cow-shed; and brooms into the bargain; for, though the seed would not ripen, and though the broom-part would not be of the best quality, it would be a thousand times better than heath. The seed might be sent from this country, and, though the Borough-villains would tax it, as their rapacious system does EVEN THE SEEDS OF TREES; yet, a small quantity of seed would suffice.

645. As an ornamental plant nothing equals this.

The Indian Corn is far inferior to it in this respect. Planted by the side of walks in gardens, what beautiful avenues it would make for the summer! I have seen the plants eighteen feet and a half high. I always wanted to get some seed in England; but, I never could. My friends thought it too childish and whimsical a thing to attend to. If the plant should so far come to perfection in England as to yield the broom-materials, it will be a great thing; and, if it fall short of that, it will certainly surpass reeds for thatching and screening purposes, for sheep-yards, and for various other uses. However, I have no doubt of its producing brooms; for, the Indian Corn, though only certain sorts of it will ripen its seed even in Hampshire, will always come into bloom, and, in the Broom-Corn, it is the little stalks, or branches, out of which the flower comes, that makes the broom. If the plant succeed thus far in England, you may be sure that the Borough-villains will tax the brooms, until their system be blown to atoms; and, I should not wonder if they were to make the broom, like hops, an article of excise, and send their spies into people's fields and gardens to see that the revenue was not "defrauded." Precious villains! They stand between the people and all the gifts of nature! But this cannot last.

646. I am happy to tell you, that Ellenborough and Gibbs have retired! Ill health is the pretence. I never yet knew ill health induce such fellows to loosen their grasp of the public purse. But, be it so: then I feel pleasure on that account. To all the other pangs of body and mind let them add that of knowing, that William Cobbett, whom they thought they had put down for ever, if not killed, lives to rejoice at their pains and their death, to trample on their graves, and to hand down their names for the just judgment of posterity. What! are these feelings wrong? Are they sinful? What defence have we, then, against tyranny? If the oppressor be not to experience the resentment of the oppressed, let us at once acknowledge the divine right of tyranny; for, what has tyranny else to fear? Who has it to fear, but those whom it has injured? It is the

aggregate of individual injury that makes up national injury: it is the aggregate of individual resentment that makes up national resentment. National resentment is absolutely necessary to the producing of redress for oppression; and, therefore, to say that individual resentment is wrong, is to say, that there ought to be no redress for oppression: it is, in short, to pass a sentence of never-ending slavery on all mankind. Some Local Militiamen; young fellows who had been compelled to become soldiers, and who had no knowledge of military discipline; who had, by the Act of Parliament, been promised a quinea each before they marched; who had refused to march because the guinea had not been wholly paid them; some of these young men, these mere boys, had, for this mutiny, as it was called, been flogged at Elv in Cambridgeshire, under a guard of German bayonets and sabres. At this I expressed my indignation in the strongest terms; and, for doing this, I was put for two years into a gaol along with men convicted of unnatural crimes, robbery, and under charge of murder, and where Astlet was, who was under sentence of death. To this was added a fine of a thousand pounds sterling; and, when the two years should expire, bonds for the peace and good behaviour for seven years! The seven years are not yet expired. I will endeavour to be of "good behaviour" for the short space that is to come; and, I am sure, I have behaved well for the past; for never were seven years of such efficient exertion seen in the life of any individual.

647. The tyrants are hard pushed now. The Bank Notes are their only ground to stand on; and that ground will be moved from under them in a little time. Strange changes since you left England, short as the time has been! I am fully of opinion, that my four years which I gave the system at my coming away, will see the end of it. There can be no more war carried on by them. I see they have had Baring, of Loan-notoriety at the Holy Alliance-Congress. He has been stipulating for a supply of paper-money. They should have got my consent to let the paper-money remain; for, I can destroy it whenever I please. All sorts of projects are on foot.

344 LETTER II. TO M. BIRKBECK, Esq. [Part III.

"Inimitable Notes;" paying in specie by weight of metal. Oh! the wondrous fools! A sudden blow-up; or, a blow-up somewhat slow, by ruin and starvation; one of these must come; unless they speedily reduce the interest of the Debt; and even that will not save the seat-dealers.

648. In the meanwhile let us enjoy ourselves here amongst this kind and hospitable people; but, let us never forget, that England is our country, and that her freedom and renown ought to be as dear to us as the blood in our veins. God bless you, and give you health and happiness.

WM. COBBETT.

POSTSCRIPT.

RUTA BAGA; OR, SWEDISH TURNIP.

To the Editor of the New York Evening Post.

Hyde Park, Long-Island, 3d Jan. 1819.

SIR,

the crops of Ruta Baga, were, by many persons, considered romantic; or, at best, a good deal strained. I am happy, therefore, to be able to communicate to the public, through your obliging columns, a letter from an American farmer on the subject. You may remember, if you did me the honour to read my Treatise on the cultivation of this root (in Part I. of the Year's Residence), that I carried the amount of my best Botleycrops no higher than one thousand three hundred bushels to the acre. The following interesting letter will, I think, convince every one, that I kept, in all my statements, below the mark. Here we have an average weight of roots of six pounds and a half.

650. I beg Mr. Townsend to accept of my best thanks for his letter, which has given me very great satisfaction, and which will, I am sure, be of great use

in promoting the cultivation of this valuable root.

gard to the mode of preserving the Ruta Baga. I have, in the SECOND PART of my Year's Residence, which will be published at New York, in a few days, given a very full account of this matter.

I am, Sir, your most humble
And most obedient Servant,

WM. COBBETT.

DEAR SIR,

New York, Dec. 30, 1818.

652. I TAKE the liberty of sending to you the following experiments upon the culture of your Ruta Baga, made by my uncie, Isaac Townsend, Esq. of Orange County, in this State. The seeds were procured from your stock, and the experiments, I think, will tend to corroborate the sentiments which you have so laudably and so successfully inculcated on the subject of this

interesting article of agriculture.

653. A piece of strong dry loam ten feet square on the N.E. side of a mountain in Moreau township, Orange County, was thoroughly cleared of stones, and dug up twelve inches deep, on the 10th of June last; it was then covered by a mixture of ten bushels of charcoal dust and twenty bushels of black swamp mould, which was well harrowed in. About the 9th of July it was sown with your Ruta Baga in drills of twenty inches apart, the turnips being ten inches distant from each other. They came up badly and were weeded out on the 10th of August. On the 15th of August a tablespoonful of ashes was put round every turnip, which operation was repeated on the 20th of September. The ground was kept perfectly clean through the whole season. Six seeds of the common turnip were by accident dropped into the patch, and received the same attention as the rest. These common turnips weighed two pounds a piece. The whole yield of the Ruta Baga was three bushels, each turnip weighing from four The roots penetrated about twelve to eight pounds. inches into the ground, although the season was remarkably dry.

654. A piece of rich, moist, loamy land, containing four square rods, was ploughed twice in June, and the seeds of your Ruta Baga sown on the 4th of July in broad cast, and kept clean through the season. This patch produced twenty-five bushels of turnips, each turnip weighing from four to nine pounds. This, you perceive, is at the enormous rate of 1000 bushels an

acre!

655. It is Mr. Townsend's opinion, that on some of the soils of Orange County your Ruta Baga may be made to yield 1500 bushels an acre.

I remain, with much respect,

Your obedient Servant,

P. S. TOWNSEND.

William Cobbett, Esq.

Hyde Park, Long Island.

SECOND POSTSCRIPT.

FEARON'S FALSHOODS.

TO THE EDITOR OF THE NATIONAL ADVOCATE.

SIR.

Hyde Park, Jan. 9th, 1819.

656. Before I saw your paper of the day before yesterday, giving some extracts from a book published in England by one Fearon, I had written part of the following article, and had prepared to send it home as part of a Register, of which I send one every week. Your paper enabled me to make an addition to the article; and, in the few words below, I have this day sent the whole off to be published in London. If you think it worth inserting, I beg you to have the goodness to give it a place; and I beg the same favour at the hands of all those editors who may have published Fearon's account of what he calls his visit to me.

I am, Sir,
Your most obedient,
And most humble Servant,

WM. COBBETT.

657. There is, I am told, one Fearon, who has gone home and written and published a book, abusing this country and its people in the grossest manner. I only hear of it by letter. I hear, also, that he speaks of me as if he knew me. I will tell you how far he knew me: I live at a country house 20 miles from New York. One morning, in the summer of 1817, a young man came into the hall, and introduced himself to me under the name of Fearon. The following I find about him

in my journal:-" A Mr. FEARON came this morning " and had breakfast with us. Told us an odd story " about having slept in a black woman's hut last night " for sixpence, though there are excellent taverns at " every two miles along the road. Told us a still odder " story about his being an envoy from a host of families " in London, to look out for a place of settlement in " America; but he took special care not to name any " one of those families, though we asked him to do it. "We took him, at first, for a sort of spy. William "thinks he is a shopkeeper's clerk; I think he has " been a tailor. I observed that he carried his elbow " close to his sides, and his arms, below the elbow, in " a horizontal position. It came out that he had been " with BUCHANAN, Castlereagh's consul at New York; " but it is too ridiculous; such a thing as this cannot " be a spy; he can get access nowhere but to taverns " and boarding houses."

658. This note now stands in my journal or diary of 22d August 1817. I remember that he asked me some very silly questions about the *prices of land*, *cattle*, and other things, which I answered very shortly. He asked my advice about the families emigrating, and the very

my advice about the families emigrating, and the very words I uttered in answer were these:—" Every thing "I can say, in such a case, is to discourage the enter-

" prize. If Englishmen come here, let them come individually, and sit down amongst the natives: no

" other plan is rational."

659. What I have heard of this man since, is, that he spent his time, or great part of it, in New York, amongst the idle and dissolute young Englishmen, whose laziness and extravagance had put them in a state to make them uneasy, and to make them unnoticed by respectable people. That country must be bad, to be sure, which would not give them ease and abundance without labour or economy.

660. Now, what can such a man know of America? He has not kept house; he has had no being in any neighbourhood; he has never had any circle of acquaint-ances amongst the people; he has never been a guest under any of their roofs; he knows nothing of their manners or their characters; and how can such a man

be a judge of the effects of their institutions, civil, poli-

tical, or religious?

661. I have no doubt, however, that the reviews and newspapers, in the pay of the Boroughmongers, will do their best to propagate the falshoods contained in this man's book. But what would you say of the people of America, if they were to affect to believe what the French General said of the people of England? This man, in a book which he published in France, said, that all the English married women got drunk, and swore like troopers; and that all the young women were strumpets, and that the greater part of them had bastards before they were married. Now, if the people of Americe were to affect to believe this, what should we say of them? Yet, this is just as true as this Fearon's account of the people of America.

662. As to the facts of this man's visit to me, my son William, who is, by this time, in London, can and will vouch for their truth at any time, and, if necessary, to Fearon's face, if Fearon has a face which he dares

show.

663. Since writing the above, the New York papers have brought me a specimen of Mr. Fearon's performance. I shall notice only his account of his visit to me.

It is in the following words:

664. " A Visit to Mr. Cobbett .- Upon arriving at " Mr. Cobbett's gate, my feelings, in walking along " the path which led to the residence of this celebrated " man are difficult to describe. The idea of a person " self-banished, leading an isolated life in a foreign " land; a path rarely trod, fences in ruins, the gate " broken, a house mouldering to decay, added to much " awkwardness of feeling on my part, calling upon an " entire stranger, produced in my mind feelings of " thoughtfulness and melancholy. I would fain almost " have returned without entering the wooden mansion, " imagining that its possessor would exclaim, ' What " intruding fellow is here coming to break in upon my " pursuits?' But these difficulties ceased almost with " their existence. A female servant (an English wo-" man) informed me that her master was from home, attending at the county court. Her language was

" natural enough for a person in her situation, she " pressed me to walk in, being quite certain that I was "her countryman; and she was so delighted to see an " Englishman, instead of those nasty guessing Yankees. " Following my guide through the kitchen, (the floor " of which, she asserted, was imbedded with two feet " of dirt when Mr. Cobbett came there-it had been " previously in the occupation of Americans) I was "conducted to a front parlour, which contained but "a single chair and several trunks of sea-clothes. "Mr. Cobbett's first question on seeing me was, 'Are " you an American, Sir ?' then, ' What are my ob-" jects in the United States? Was I acquainted with "the friends of liberty in London? How long had I "left?' &c. He was immediately familiar. " pleasingly disappointed with the general tone of his "manners. Mr Cobbett thinks meanly of the Ameri-" can people, but spoke highly of the economy of their " government.-He does not advise persons in respec-"table circumstances to emigrate, even in the present " state of England. In his opinion a family who can "barely live upon their property, will more consult " their happiness by not removing to the United States. "He almost laughs at Mr. Birkbeck's settling in the "western country. This being the first time I had seen " this well-known character, I viewed him with no or-"dinary degree of interest. A print by Bartolozzi, "executed in 1801, converys a correct outline of his " person. His eyes are small, and pleasingly good "natured. To a French gentleman present, he was " attentive; with his sons, familiar; to his servants, "easy, but to all, in his tone and manner, resolute " and determined. He feels no hesitation in praising "himself, and evidently believes that he is eventually " destined to be the Atlas of the British nation. His " faculty in relating anecdotes is amusing. Instan-"ces when we meet. My impressions of Mr. Cob-"bett are, that those who know him would like him "if they can be content to submit unconditionally to "his dictation. 'Obey me and I will treat you kindly; " if you do not, I will trample on you,' seemed visible "in every word and feature. He appears to feel, in its fullest force, the sentiment,

'I have no brother, am like no brother:

'I am myself alone.'"

665. It is unlucky for this blade, that the parties are alive. First - let the " English woman" speak for

herself, which she does, in these words:

666. I remember, that, about a week after I came to Hyde Park, in 1817, a man came to the house in the evening, when Mr. Cobbett was out, and that he came again the next morning. I never knew, or asked, what countryman he was. He came to the back door. I first gave him a chair in a back-room; but, as he was a slippery-looking young man, and as it was growing late, my husband thought it was best to bring him down into the kitchen, where he staid till he went away. I had no talk with him. I could not know what condition Mr. Cobbett found the house in, for I did not come here 'till the middle of August. I never heard whether the gentleman that lived here before Mr. Cobbett. was an American, or not. I never in my life said a word against the people or the country: I am very glad I came to it; I am doing very well in it; and have found as good and kind friends amongst the Americans. as I ever had in all my life.

MARY ANN CHURCHER.

Hyde Park, 8th January, 1819.

667. Mrs. Churcher puts me in mind, that I asked her what sort of a looking man it was, and that she said he looked like an Exciseman, and that Churcher exclaimed: "Why, you fool, they don't have any Excise-"men and such fellows here!"—I never was at a county court in America in my life. I was out shooting. As to the house, it is a better one than he ever entered, except as a lodger or a servant, or to carry home work. The path, so far from being trackless, was as beaten as the highway.—The gentleman who lived here before me was an Englishman, whose name was Crow. But

only think of dirt, two feet deep, in a kitchen! All is false.—The house was built by Judge Ludlow. It is large, and very sound and commodious. The avenues of trees before it the most beautiful that I ever saw. The orchard, the fine shade and fine grass all about the house; the abundant garden, the beautiful turnip field; the whole a subject worthy of admiration; and not a single drawback. A hearty, unostentatious welcome from me and my sons. A breakfast such, probably, as the fellow will never eat again. - I leave the public to guess, whether it be likely, that I should give a chap like this my opinions, about government or people! Just as if I did not know the people! Just as if they were new to me! The man was not in the house half an hour in the morning. Judge, then, what he could know of my manners and character. He was a long time afterwards at New York. Would he not have been here a second time, if I had been familiar enough to relate anecdotes to him? Such blades are not backward in renewing their visits whenever they get but a little encouragement.-He, in another part of the extracts that I have seen, complains of the reserve of the American ladies. No "social intercourse," he says, between the sexes. That is to say, he could find none! I'll engage he could not; amongst the whites, at least. It is hardly possible for me to talk about the public affairs of England and not to talk of some of my own acts; but is it not monstrous to suppose, that I should praise myself, and show that I believed myself destined to be the Atlas of the British nation, in my conversation of a few minutes with an utter stranger, and that, too, a blade whom I took for a decent tailor, my son William for a shopkeeper's clerk, and Mrs. Churcher, with less charity, for a slippery young man, or, at best, for an Exciseman ?- As I said before, such a man can know nothing of the people of America. He has no channel through which to get at them. And, indeed, why should he! Can he go into the families of people at home! Not he, indeed, beyond his own low circle. Why should he do it here, then? Did he think he was coming here to live at free quarter? The black woman's hut, indeed, he might force himself into with impunity;

sixpence would insure him a reception there; but, it would be a shame, indeed, if such a man could be admitted to unreserved intercourse with American ladies. Slippery as he was, he could not slide into their good graces, and into the possession of their fathers' soulsubduing dollars; and so he is gone home to curse the "nasty guessing Americans."

lead to might force blanch into with forgion

WM. COBBETT.

INDEX TO PART I.

APPLES exchanged for turnips, March 31st. Fall-Pipin, description of, Oct. 7th. Buckwheat, time for sowing, July 23d .- Time for cutting, Barns, very fine in Pennsylvania, Feb. 16th. Beans, kidney, green, in market, Oct. 11th. Board of Agriculture, par. 117. Birkbeck, Mr., par. 16, Jan. 21st, Feb. 23d, March 11th. Burdett, Sir F., March 12th, par. 98. Candles, home made, remarks on, Dec. 25th. Climate, May 5th 1817, to April 24th 1818. Corporations, as law-givers, Feb. 28th. Curwen, Mr., par. 68, 69. 121. 123. Cartwright, Major, par. 111. Cramp, Mr., par. 117. 132. Castlereagh, par. 120. Disciples, ears of corn that they plucked, June 3d. Dress whereby to judge of the weather, June 16th, July 10th, Sept. 18th-28th, Oct. 11th-22d, Nov. 11th, March 21st. Dews, equal to showers, July 29th, Jan. 13th. England, neatness of its inhabitants, par. 18 .- Wetness of the climate, July 24th .- Population of, shifted, and not augmented, by the Funding System, Feb. 16th. Fences on Long Island, par. 16. Flies and musquitoes, bred by filth, June 19th, July 14. Fowls ought to be kept warm, Jan. 4th, March 15th. Farms, description of, on Long Island, par. 22. houses in Pennsylvania, Feb. 16th. Fruits, dried, March 31st. Flowers, want of, in America, par. 22. Fortescue, Feb. 16th. Freemantle, Mr. Nicholas, March 1st. Gauntlet, Mr. W., his pigs, par. 101. Harvest earlier than in England, par. 19 .- Description of, July 24th. Hops grows well in America, Feb. 7th. Hedges not found in America, March 11th. Health, par. 23. Hagar, prayer of, Feb. 16th. Harrisburg, description of, living at, Jan. 25th-27th. Hulme, Mr., Feb. 15th-20th. Hinxman, Mr. Richard, March 1st. Hardwicke, Lord, par. 119. Indian corn described, June 3d. Locusts that John the Baptist lived on, June 3d.

Long Island, description of, par. 12 to 15.—Its nearness to the sea an advantage in summer, June 14th.

Lancaster, description of, Jan. 22d, Feb. 12th-16th.

Livingstone, Mr. Chancellor, par. 25. 27. Mangel Wurzel, an indifferent root, par. 28.

Moses, July 24th.

Maseres, Mr. Baron, Dec. 16th.

M'Kean, Judge, Jan. 10th. M'Allister, Mr., Jan. 28th. Malthus, Parson, Feb. 16th.

New Jersey, in comparison to Pennsylvania, March 11th.

Newbold, Mr., March 11th. Oliver, the spy, March 2nd.

Ploughing, principles of, par. 121 to 125.

Peas, fit to gather Jone 18th.—Ripe in 40 days.—Green, in market, October 11th.

Puddings of apple, July 9th, August 23rd. Philadelphia, remarks on, Jan. 15th.

Paul, James, Jan. 16th, March 9th.

Penn, William, Feb. 16th. Pendrill, Mr., March 1st. Perry, Mr. James, par. 21.

Pitt, par. 117.

Quakers, hospitality of, March 10th.—Bad gardeners, March 11th.

River Delaware, Jan. 13th, Feb. 20th.
.... Susquehannah, Jan. 25th, Feb. 1st.

Radish, very large, Oct. 28th.

Ruta Baga, description of the plant, par. 25 to 30.—Mode of saving and of preserving the seed, par. 31 to 36.—Time of sowing, par. 37 to 44.—Quality and preparation of the seed, par. 45 to 49.—Manner of sowing, par. 50 to 55.—After-culture, par. 56 to 64.—Transplanting, par. 65 to 103.—Time and manner of harvesting, par. 104 to 114.—Quality of the crop, par. 115 to 156.

Roscoe, Mr., March 26th. Rousseau, March 26th.

Stones, a barometer, August 7th.

Singing-birds, none in America, par. 22. Shoes need never be nailed, March 31st. Scavengers substituted by hogs, Feb. 28th. Stock, prices of, May 20th, Dec. 15th.

..... of provisions at breaking up of winter, par. 21.

Severne, Mr., March 1st. Stevens, Mr., March 2nd.

Steam boats, par. 12.

Threshing, mode of, July 24th.

Travelling, author's, March 11th to 13th.

Trenton, laziness of the young men, March 11th.

Taverns, Slaymaker's, living at, Feb. 12th. charges very reasonable, March 11th.

Taylor, Mr. Antony, March 11th.

Tull, par. 60. 68. 121. 124.

Vegetation, how vigorous, July 29th.—Continues very late, Nov. 16th.—State of it in April, par. 21.

Vere, March 1st.

Woodcocks, time of coming, July 26th.

Western countries, folly of going to, par. 96.—The people dirty, Jan. 21st.

Winter of America preferable to that of England, Mar. 31st.
...... does not set in till the ponds are full,

Woods of America, beautiful, par. 15.

Woods, Mr., par. 101.

Yankee family, migration of, March 12th. Yoke, single for oxen, (plate of it), par. 124. Young, Arthur, Sept. 9th. par. 117, 118.

INDEX TO PART II.

Broom-Corn, paragraph 171. Baker, Mr., 185. 445. Botley, 211. Byrd, Mr. James, 233. Brown, Mr. Timothy, 286. Bentham, Mr., Jeremy, 405. Brougham, Mr., 405. Burdett, Sir F., 409. Chalcraft, 430. Curwen, Mr., 164. 283. Cabbages, 165, 166. Cochrane, Lord, 242.444. Cows, 293. Cheese, 330. Coffin, Sir Isaac, 371. Christian, Mr. Professor, 400. Clarke, Mrs., 443. Dorsetshire, 181. Dayrea, Mr., 197. 232. Drinking, 230. Earth-burning, 165. 194. Encyclopædia Britannica, 190. Expense of cultivating Cabbages in America, 190.

Fences, 162. Fruit in America, 334. Furniture, Household, 337. Gater, Mr., 324. Government, Laws and Religion of America, 400. Giddy, Mr. Davies, 409. Garnier, Mr., 428. Hulme, Mr., 161. Hart, the Rev. Mr., 232. Hogs, 295. Hicks, Mr. Elias, 315. House-keeping, expenses of, 325. Hackney Coaches at New York, 338. Hops, 430. Indian Corn, transplanting of, 165. 213. Judges, description of the American, 264. Lockhart, Mr., 445. Lawrence, Mr. Judge, 219. London, 176. Mitchell, Dr., 218. Mitchell, Mr. Judge, 232. 236. 257. New York, 176. New Brunswick, 186. Nova Scotia, 241. Preface to Second Part, 157. Paul, Mr. James, 168. Paul, Miss Sarah, 169. Pricking out plants, 181. Preparation of the land intended for root crops, 183 Postscript, 247. Pitt, 263. Poultry, 309. Prices of land, 310. of labour, food and raiment, 313. People of America, their manners, customs, &c. 342 Phillips, Sir Richard, 372. Paupers, 389. the Sardinian, 394. Parsons, the Hampshire, 444. Ruta Baga, 165. 175. 225. Rural Sports, 369. Rose, George, 428. Soot, 207. Smith, Mr. William, 245. Sheep, 294. Stickler, Mr., 330. Servants, Domestic, 339. Stewart, Daniel, 439.

Tull, Mr., 164. 201. 259. Turnips, Swedish, 225. Tierney, Mr., 230.
Tissot, Monsieur, 282.
Taylor, Job, 328.
Tocker, Miss, 443.
Tithes, 443.
Wiltshire, 181.
Waithman, Signor, 336.
Wakefield, Mr. O., 398.
Winchester, 444.
Wiggins, Mr., 201.

INDEX TO PART III.

Burdett, Sir F., 461.
Birkbeck, Mr., 507.
Letters to, against emigrating to

ritory, 569. 616. 621.

Broom-Corn, the utility of, 641.

Baring, Mr., 647.

Cartwright, Major, 461.

Chambers Mr. Judge

Chambers, Mr. Judge, a tavern-keeper, 526.

Clay, Mr., 531. Chillicothe, 540.

Corn, Mr. Birkbeck's idea of the extent of crop of, &c. 606.

Cobbett, Mr., his Letter on Ruta Baga, 649.

Churcher, Mary-Ann, 666.

Brown, T.Esq., Dedication to, 249.

Dillon, Mr., 549.

Expenses of Mr. Hulme on his Tour, 566.

..... ditto, for a Year's house-keeping, 567.

beck, 592. 597. 693.

..... of the erection of buildings, by Mr. Cobbett, 599, 600, 601. 603.

French Lick, 526.

Flower, Mr. G., his opinion that Farmers transplant well."

Freedom of Gipsies, 584.

Flogging of English Local Militia at Ely, 646.

Fearon's Falsehoods, 656.

Graham, Mr., 555.

Hulme, Mr., 450.

Harmony, 513.

Iron Factories, 549.

Journal, Introduction to, 453.

Louisville, 493.

Lawrence, Mr. Judge, his farm, 590.

Maysville, 537.

Mills, 637.

Preface to THIRD PART, 449.

Pittsburgh, 472. 561.

Princeton, 502.

Prices, general list of, taken by Mr. Hulme at Zanesville, 550. Partnerships amongst leaders not always harmonious, 582.

Pigs, Swedish Turnips, &c. 643.

Quakers and Parsons: the former preferred to the latter, 568.

Rapp, Mr. George, 515. 583.

Road of the general government from Zanesville to Pittsburgh, 553.

Rencontre at New York, 565.

Steam-boats, 556.

Steubanville, Woollen Factory at, 558.

Society in the Illinois, 581.

Thatching, 641.

Townsend, P. S. Esq., Letter to Mr. Cobbett on the Ruta Baga, 652.

Vevay, 492.

Western Countries, 449.

Wages in Western Countries, 535.

Wheeling, Virginia, 554.

Windham, Mr., 584.

Zanesville, 546.

B. Bensley, Bolt Court, Fleet Street.



98/2000

Lay 6 - Peach treet gorns + Plum trees in fall bloom Letters onions Carrots & harsneps just come up out of the ground thery trees come out in bleed People plant polalois -Cats sown in April, come up & the doney beauty with Beats & cabbuge up apple brees ful bloom green peade Cherrels quite refe 6 burrants right days month ripe 12 Peace who for table in 30 Days after some

